











*Eight Volumes, crown 8vo, price 5s. each, sold separately.*

A NEW AND UNIFORM EDITION OF  
A DEVOTIONAL COMMENTARY  
ON THE  
GOSPEL NARRATIVE

BY THE

REV. ISAAC WILLIAMS, B.D.

FORMERLY FELLOW OF TRINITY COLLEGE, OXFORD

VOL. I. THOUGHTS on the STUDY of the HOLY GOSPELS

CHARACTERISTIC DIFFERENCES IN  
THE FOUR GOSPELS.

OUR LORD'S MANIFESTATIONS OF  
HIMSELF.

THE RULE OF SCRIPTURAL INTERPRE-  
TATION FURNISHED BY OUR LORD.

ANALOGIES OF THE GOSPEL.

MENTION OF ANGELS IN THE GOSPELS.  
PLACES OF OUR LORD'S ABODE AND  
MINISTRY.

OUR LORD'S MODE OF DEALING WITH  
HIS APOSTLES.

CONCLUSION.

INDEX OF TEXTS.

VOL. II. A HARMONY of the FOUR EVANGELISTS

THE BIRTH AT BETHLEHEM.

THE BAPTISM IN JORDAN.

THE FIRST PASSOVER.

THE SECOND PASSOVER.

CHRIST WITH THE TWELVE.

THE TWELVE SENT FORTH.

TEACHING IN GALILEE.

TEACHING AT JERUSALEM.

LAST JOURNEY FROM GALILEE TO  
JERUSALEM.

THE APPROACH TO JERUSALEM.

THE TEACHING IN THE TEMPLE.

THE DISCOURSE ON THE MOUNT OF  
OLIVES.

THE LAST SUPPER.

THE PASSION.

THE RESURRECTION.

VOL. III. OUR LORD'S NATIVITY

THE BIRTH AT BETHLEHEM.

THE BAPTISM IN JORDAN.

THE FIRST PASSOVER.

## VOL. IV. OUR LORD'S MINISTRY. SECOND YEAR

THE SECOND PASSOVER.  
CHRIST WITH THE TWELVE.

THE TWELVE SENT FORTH.

## VOL. V. OUR LORD'S MINISTRY. THIRD YEAR

TEACHING IN GALILEE.  
TEACHING AT JERUSALEM.

LAST JOURNEY FROM GALILEE TO  
JERUSALEM.

## VOL. VI. THE HOLY WEEK

THE APPROACH TO JERUSALEM.  
THE TEACHING IN THE TEMPLE.  
THE DISCOURSE ON THE MOUNT OF  
OLIVES.

THE LAST SUPPER.  
INDEX OF TEXTS.

## VOL. VII. OUR LORD'S PASSION

THE HOUR OF DARKNESS.  
THE AGONY.  
THE APPREHENSION.  
THE CONDEMNATION.

THE DAY OF SORROWS.  
THE HALL OF JUDGMENT.  
THE CRUCIFIXION.  
THE SEPULTURE.

## VOL. VIII. OUR LORD'S RESURRECTION

THE DAY OF DAYS.  
THE GRAVE VISITED.  
CHRIST APPEARING.  
THE GOING TO EMMAUS.  
THE FORTY DAYS.

THE APOSTLES ASSEMBLED.  
THE LAKE IN GALILEE.  
THE MOUNTAIN IN GALILEE.  
THE RETURN FROM GALILEE.

Devotional Commentary on the Gospel Narrative

*VOLUME II*

A HARMONY OF THE FOUR  
EVANGELISTS



Devotional Commentary on the Gospel Narrative.

---

A HARMONY OF THE FOUR  
EVANGELISTS

BY THE  
REV. ISAAC WILLIAMS, B.D.

LATE FELLOW OF TRINITY COLLEGE, OXFORD

*NEW EDITION*

RIVINGTONS  
WATERLOO PLACE, LONDON

MDCCCLXXXIV



# CONTENTS

THE HARMONY BEING INTENDED AS A KEY OR COMPANION TO THE COMMENTARY, THE TITLES OF THE PARTS AND SECTIONS WILL BE FOUND THROUGHOUT TO CORRESPOND; EXCEPT IN THE TWO LAST VOLUMES OF THE SERIES.

## PART I

### The Birth at Bethlehem

SECT.	PAGE
I. The Preface of St. Luke .....	1
II. The Angel appearing to Zacharias .....	<i>ib.</i>
III. The Angel appearing unto St. Mary .....	3
IV. Mary visiting Elisabeth .....	4
V. The Birth of the Baptist .....	5
VI. The Angel appearing to Joseph.....	6
VII. The City of David.....	7
VIII. The Angels and the Shepherds .....	<i>ib.</i>
IX. The Circumcision .....	8
X. The Genealogies .....	9
XI. The Coming of the Magi.....	11
XII. The Presentation in the Temple .....	12
XIII. The Flight into Egypt.....	13
XIV. The Childhood of Christ .....	14

## PART II

## The Baptism in Jordan

SECT.	PAGE
I. The Eternal Generation of Christ .....	16
II. The Voice in the Wilderness .....	18
III. The Teaching of the Baptist .....	22
IV. The Approach of Christ foretold .....	24
V. Christ is baptized .....	ib.
VI. The Temptation .....	28
VII. The Testimony of John .....	31
VIII. Disciples brought to Christ.....	32
IX. The Marriage in Cana of Galilee .....	33

## PART III

## The First Passover

## TO THE END OF THE FIRST YEAR OF OUR LORD'S MINISTRY

I. The Cleansing of the Temple .....	35
II. Nicodemus coming by Night .....	36
III. Christ in the land of Judea.....	37
IV. John cast into Prison .....	38
V. Jesus at the Well of Samaria .....	42
VI. The Nobleman from Capernaum .....	44
VII. The Jubilee announced at Nazareth .....	45
VIII. The Call of the Four Disciples .....	46
IX. The Demoniac healed .....	48
X. The Evening of the Sabbath .....	50
XI. The Mount of Beatitudes .....	52
XII. The Beatitudes .....	56
XIII. The Law and the Prophets fulfilled .....	ib.
XIV. Alms, Prayer, and Fasting.....	59
XV. Proverbial Precepts of the Gospel.....	61
XVI. The Miraculous Draught of Fishes .....	63



SECT.	PAGE
XVII. The Leper healed .....	64
XVIII. The Cure of the Paralytic ...	66
XIX. The Calling of St. Matthew .....	72

## PART IV

### The Second Passover

OR, THE BEGINNING OF THE SECOND YEAR OF OUR LORD'S MINISTRY

I. The Pool of Bethesda .....	74
II. The Charge of Breaking the Sabbath .....	75
III. Christ the Resurrection .....	ib.
IV. The Testimonies of Christ .....	76
V. Plucking the Ears of Corn on the Sabbath-day .....	78
VI. The Withered Hand healed on the Sabbath.....	80
VII. Christ retires toward the Sea.....	84
VIII. Election of the Twelve Apostles.....	86
IX. The Sermon on the Plain .....	90
X. Laws of Christian Love .....	ib.
XI. Laws of Self-conduct .....	91
XII. The Centurion's Servant.....	92
XIII. The Widow's Son at Nain .....	95
XIV. The Message from John in Prison.....	ib.
XV. The Baptist and Christ both rejected .....	98
XVI. The Sinner Anointing Christ's Feet .....	99
XVII. Circuit through Galilee .....	101

## PART V

### Christ with the Twelve

I. The Demoniac healed at Capernaum.....	102
II. The Pharisees seek a Sign .....	108

SECT.	PAGE
III. The Unclean Spirit returning .....	110
IV. Our Lord's Mother and Brethren come to Him .....	112
V. Christ dines with a Pharisee .....	114
VI. Disciples warned against Hypocrisy.....	116
VII. The Rich Man dying suddenly .....	117
VIII. Disciples exhorted to Heavenly-mindedness .....	118
IX. The Church exhorted to watch .....	119
X. The Galileans slain by Pilate .....	121
XI. The Parables of the Sower, the Seed, and the Tares .....	122
XII. The Mustard Seed and the Leaven .....	126
XIII. Parable of the Sower explained.....	128
XIV. Parable of the Tares explained .....	136
XV. Parables of the Treasure, the Pearl, and the Net ...	137
XVI. Treatment of different Followers .....	138
XVII. The Tempest stilled on the Lake .....	140
XVIII. The Demoniacs among the Gadarenes .....	144
XIX. The Feast at the House of Levi.....	150
XX. The Raising of Jairus's Daughter .....	156
XXI. Two Blind Men healed, and a Dumb Spirit cast out	166
XXII. The Return to Nazareth .....	<i>ib.</i>

## PART VI

### *The Twelve sent forth*

I. Apostles instructed for their Mission .....	168
II. Further Instruction of Apostles .....	172
III. Herod hears of Christ .....	176
IV. Christ retires with the Twelve .....	180
V. The First Miracle of the Loaves.....	184
VI. Christ again retires to the Mountain.....	188
VII. Christ walks upon the Sea .....	190
VIII. People healed at Gennesaret .....	194
IX. Christ found at Capernaum .....	196
X. The Incarnation .....	197
XI. Murmuring of the Jews .....	198
XII. The Holy Eucharist.....	<i>ib.</i>
XIII. Disciples offended.....	199

## PART VII

## Teaching in Galilee

## THE THIRD YEAR OF OUR LORD'S MINISTRY

SECT.	PAGE
I. The Third Passover .....	200
II. Eating with Unwashen Hands .....	<i>ib.</i>
III. What defileth the Man.....	203
IV. The Woman of Canaan .....	205
V. A Deaf and Stammering Man healed .....	207
VI. The Second Miracle of the Loaves .....	208
VII. The Pharisees again seek a Sign .....	209
VIII. The Leaven of Scripture interpreted .....	211
IX. The Blind Man at Bethsaida .....	213
X. The Great Confession of St. Peter.....	214
XI. The Passion foretold .....	216
XII. The Transfiguration.....	220
XIII. The Maniac Boy .....	226
XIV. The Passion again foretold.....	232
XV. The Sacred Didrachma .....	234
XVI. Which shall be the greatest .....	236
XVII. Forbid him not .....	238
XVIII. The Parable of Forgiveness .....	242

## PART VIII

## Teaching at Jerusalem

I. Christ urged to manifest Himself .....	245
II. Christ at the Feast of Tabernacles .....	246
III. The Last Day of the Feast .....	247
IV. The Woman taken in Adultery .....	248
V. The Light of the World will leave the Jews .....	249
VI. The True Children of Abraham .....	250
VII. The Man Blind from his Birth .....	252
VIII. The Sheep-fold and Good Shepherd .....	254

SECT.	PAGE
IX. The Feast of Dedication .....	256
X. The Sisters Martha and Mary .....	257
XI. The Sickness of Lazarus .....	<i>ib.</i>
XII. The Raising of Lazarus .....	258
XIII. Effect of the Miracle .....	260

## PART IX

### Last Journey from Galilee to Jerusalem

I., II. The Seventy sent forth .....	262
III. The Seventy return .....	263
IV. The Parable of the Good Samaritan .....	264
V. The Disciples taught to Pray .....	265
VI. The Woman bowed down with Infirmary .....	266
VII. Are there few that be saved? .....	267
VIII. The Dropsy healed on the Sabbath .....	268
IX. The Parables at the Feast .....	<i>ib.</i>
X. The Great Supper .....	269
XI. All must be renounced for Christ .....	270
XII. The Lost Sheep and the Lost Piece of Money .....	271
XIII. The Prodigal Son .....	272
XIV. The Unjust Steward .....	273
XV. The Rich Man and Lazarus .....	274
XVI. Disciples warned of Offences .....	276
XVII. The Zeal of James and John reproved .....	<i>ib.</i>
XVIII. The Ten Lepers .....	277
XIX. On the Coming of the Kingdom .....	278
XX. The Importunate Widow .....	279
XXI. The Pharisee and the Publican .....	<i>ib.</i>
XXII. Divorce and Chastity .....	280
XXIII. Little Children brought to Christ .....	282
XXIV. The Rich Young Ruler .....	284
XXV. The Labourers in the Vineyard .....	290
XXVI. The Passion again foretold .....	292
XXVII. The Request of James and John .....	294

SECT.	PAGE
XXVIII. The Blind Men at Jericho .....	296
XXIX. The House of Zaccheus .....	300
XXX. Parable of the Pounds.....	302

## PART X

### The Approach to Jerusalem

I. State of Feeling in the City .....	304
II. The Supper at Bethany .....	<i>ib.</i>
III. The Remark of Judas .....	306
IV. The Morning of Palm Sunday .....	308
V. The Procession from Bethany on Palm Sunday .....	310
VI. The Descent of the Mount of Olives .....	314
VII. Christ weeping over Jerusalem .....	316
VIII. Christ entering Jerusalem .....	318
IX. The Greeks brought to Christ .....	319
X. Unbelief of the Jews .....	320
XI. The Cursing of the Fig Tree .....	321
XII. The Buyers and Sellers in the Temple .....	322
XIII. The Return to the Temple .....	324

## PART XI

### The Teaching in the Temple

I. The Question of Authority .....	326
II. The Parable of the Two Sons .....	328
III. The Parable of the Vineyard .....	330
IV. The Stone rejected of the Builders .....	334
V. Parable of the Marriage Feast .....	336
VI. The Question of Tribute .....	338
VII. The Question of the Sadducees .....	340
VIII. The First and Great Commandment .....	346
IX. Our Lord's Question of the Son of David .....	348

SECT.	PAGE
X. Caution against the Pharisees .....	350
XI. The Woes denounced in the Temple .....	352
XII. The Widow at the Treasury .....	357

## PART XII

### The Discourse on the Mount of Olives

I. Inquiry of the Disciples .....	358
II. The Beginning of Sorrows .....	360
III. Suffering of Disciples .....	362
IV. The Days of Antichrist .....	366
V. The Son of Man Coming .....	370
VI. The Warnings .....	372
VII. Parable of the Ten Virgins .....	378
VIII. Parable of the Talents.....	379
IX. The Son of Man on the Throne of His Glory .....	380

## PART XIII

### The Last Supper

I. The Betrayal .....	382
II. Preparation for the Passover .....	384
III. The Cup of the Old Testament .....	388
IV. Washing the Disciples' Feet .....	390
V., VI. Judas Present .....	<i>ib.</i>
VII. St. Peter warned .....	396
VIII. The Bread .....	398
IX. Christ Consoling His Disciples .....	400
X. The Cup of the New Testament.....	402
XI. The True Vine .....	<i>ib.</i>
XII. Promise of the Comforter .....	405
XIII. The Great Intercession .....	407
XIV. The Going Forth .....	408

## PART XIV

## The Passion

SECT.	PAGE
I. Our Lord's Agony in the Garden .....	412
II. Christ betrayed and apprehended .....	416
III. The Denials of St. Peter .....	424
IV. Christ is condemned before Caiaphas .....	430
V. Our Lord delivered up to Pilate .....	436
VI. Christ sent to Herod .....	438
VII. Christ rejected of the People .....	440
VIII. Christ delivered up to be Crucified .....	444
IX. The Remorse of Judas .....	450
X. The Way of Sorrows .....	<i>ib.</i>
XI. The Crucifixion .....	454
XII. The Death of Christ .....	462
XIII. The Evening of the Crucifixion .....	468

## PART XV

## The Resurrection

I. The Great Sabbath .....	474
II. The End of the Sabbath .....	<i>ib.</i>
III. An Angel speaks to the Women .....	476
IV. The Guard proceed to the Chief Priests .....	477
V. Mary Magdalene calls St. Peter and St. John.....	<i>ib.</i>
VI. Our Lord appears to Mary Magdalene .....	478
VII. Our Lord seen by the Women.....	480
VIII. The Women in St. Luke's account .....	<i>ib.</i>
IX. The Disciples going to Emmaus .....	481
X. Their Return to Jerusalem.....	482
XI. Our Lord appears to the Apostles in the absence of St. Thomas .....	483
XII. Second appearance to the Apostles, Thomas being present .....	484

SECT.	PAGE
XIII. Christ appears by the Lake in Galilee .....	486
XIV. Our Lord appears on the Mountain in Galilee .....	488
XV. Various Manifestations .....	489
XVI. Christ appears to the Apostles at Jerusalem .....	ib.
XVII. The Ascension .....	490
XVIII. Conclusion of St. John's Gospel ..	492



## PART I

### The Birth at Bethlehem

#### SECTION I

##### THE PREFACE OF ST. LUKE \*

*Luke i. 1—4.*

**F**ORASMUCH as many <sup>3</sup>it seemed good to me also, have taken in hand to having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus, <sup>4</sup>that thou mightest know the certainty of those things wherein thou hast been instructed.

set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among us, <sup>2</sup>even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eye-witnesses, and ministers of the word;

#### SECTION II

##### THE ANGEL APPEARING TO ZACHARIAS

*Luke i. 5—25.*

<sup>5</sup>There was in the days of Herod, the king of Judea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abia: and his wife *was* of the daughters of Aaron, and her name *was* Elisabeth. <sup>6</sup>And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of

\* See Nativity, p. 8.

*Luke i. 5—25.*

the Lord blameless. <sup>7</sup>And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren, and they both were *now* well stricken in years.

<sup>8</sup>And it came to pass, that while he executed the priest's office before God in the order of his course, <sup>9</sup>according to the custom of the priest's office, his lot was to burn incense when he went into the temple of the Lord. <sup>10</sup>And the whole multitude of the people were praying without, at the time of incense.

<sup>11</sup>And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord, standing on the right side of the altar of incense. <sup>12</sup>And when Zacharias saw *him*, he was troubled, and fear fell upon him. <sup>13</sup>But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John. <sup>14</sup>And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and many shall rejoice at his birth. <sup>15</sup>For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb.

<sup>16</sup>And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God. <sup>17</sup>And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.

<sup>18</sup>And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years. <sup>19</sup>And the angel answering, said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God; and am sent to speak unto thee, and to shew thee these glad tidings. <sup>20</sup>And behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed, because thou believest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.

<sup>21</sup>And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple. <sup>22</sup>And when he came out, he could not speak unto them: and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple: for he beckoned unto them, and remained speechless. <sup>23</sup>And it came to pass,

*Luke i. 5—25.*

that, as soon as the days of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his own house.

<sup>24</sup>And after those days his wife Elisabeth conceived, and

hid herself five months, saying, <sup>25</sup>Thus hath the Lord dealt with me, in the days wherein he looked on *me*, to take away my reproach among men.

## SECTION III

## THE ANGEL APPEARING UNTO ST. MARY

*Luke i. 26—38.*

<sup>26</sup>And in the sixth month \* the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, <sup>27</sup>to a virgin espoused to a man, whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name *was* Mary. <sup>28</sup>And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail, *thou that art* highly favoured, the Lord *is* with thee: blessed *art* thou among women. <sup>29</sup>And when she saw *him*, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this should be.

<sup>30</sup>And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found favour with God. <sup>31</sup>And, behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his

name JESUS. <sup>32</sup>He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David: <sup>33</sup>and he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end. <sup>34</sup>Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? <sup>35</sup>And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God. <sup>36</sup>And, behold, thy cousin Elisabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age:

\* See Nativity, pp. 30, 31.

*Luke i. 26—38.*

and this is the sixth month with her who was called barren. <sup>37</sup>For with God nothing shall be impossible. <sup>38</sup>And Mary said, Behold the hand-

maid of the Lord, be it unto me according to thy word.

And the angel departed from her.

## SECTION IV

### MARY VISITING ELISABETH

*Luke i. 39—56.*

<sup>39</sup>And Mary arose in those days, and went into the hill-country with haste, into a city of Juda; <sup>40</sup>and entered into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabeth.

<sup>41</sup>And it came to pass that when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb: and Elisabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost. <sup>42</sup>And she spake out with a loud voice, and said, Blessed *art* thou among women, and blessed *is* the fruit of thy womb. <sup>43</sup>And whence *is* this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come to me? <sup>44</sup>For, lo, as soon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy. <sup>45</sup>And blessed *is* she that believed: for there shall be a performance of those

things which were told her from the Lord.

<sup>46</sup>And Mary said, My soul doth magnify the Lord, <sup>47</sup>and my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour. <sup>48</sup>For he hath regarded the low estate of his handmaiden: for, behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed. <sup>49</sup>For he that is mighty hath done to me great things; and holy *is* his name. <sup>50</sup>And his mercy *is* on them that fear him, from generation to generation. <sup>51</sup>He hath shewed strength with his arm: he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts. <sup>52</sup>He hath put down the mighty from *their* seats, and exalted them of low degree. <sup>53</sup>He hath filled the hungry with good things; and the rich he hath sent empty away. <sup>54</sup>He

*Luke i. 39—56.*

hath holpen his servant Israel, in remembrance of his mercy; <sup>55</sup> as he spake to our fathers, to Abraham, and to

his seed for ever.

<sup>56</sup> And Mary abode with her about three months, and returned to her own house.

## SECTION V

## THE BIRTH OF THE BAPTIST

*Luke i. 57—80.*

<sup>57</sup> Now Elisabeth's full time came, that she should be delivered: and she brought forth a son. <sup>58</sup> And her neighbours and her cousins heard how the Lord had shewed great mercy upon her; and they rejoiced with her.

<sup>59</sup> And it came to pass, that on the eighth day they came to circumcise the child; and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.

<sup>60</sup> And his mother answered and said, Not so; but he shall be called John. <sup>61</sup> And they said unto her, There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name. <sup>62</sup> And they made signs to his father how he would have him called.

<sup>63</sup> And he asked for a writing table, and wrote, saying, His name is John. And they marvelled all. <sup>64</sup> And his mouth was opened immediately, and

his tongue loosed, and he spake and praised God. <sup>65</sup> And fear came on all that dwelt round about them: and all these sayings were noised abroad throughout all the hill-country of Judea. <sup>66</sup> And all they that had heard them, laid them up in their hearts, saying, What manner of child shall this be! And the hand of the Lord was with him.

<sup>67</sup> And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying, <sup>68</sup> Blessed be the Lord God of Israel; for he hath visited and redeemed his people. <sup>69</sup> And hath raised up an horn of salvation for us, in the house of his servant David; <sup>70</sup> as he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, which have been since the world began: <sup>71</sup> that we should be saved from our enemies,



*Luke i. 57—80.*

and from the hand of all that hate us; <sup>72</sup>to perform the mercy *promised* to our fathers, and to remember his holy covenant: <sup>73</sup>the oath which he sware to our father Abraham, <sup>74</sup>That he would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hands of our enemies, might serve him without fear, <sup>75</sup>in holiness and righteousness before him, all the days of our life. <sup>76</sup>And thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the Highest: for thou shalt go before the face

of the Lord, to prepare his ways: <sup>77</sup>to give knowledge of salvation unto his people, by the remission of their sins, <sup>78</sup>through the tender mercy of our God; whereby the day-spring from on high hath visited us, <sup>79</sup>to give light to them that sit in darkness, and *in* the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace.

<sup>80</sup>And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the desert till the day of his shewing unto Israel\*.

## SECTION VI

*THE ANGEL APPEARING TO JOSEPH**Matt. i. 18—25.*

<sup>18</sup>Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost. <sup>19</sup>Then Joseph her husband, being a just *man*, and not willing to make her a public example, was minded to put her away privily. <sup>20</sup>But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord

appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost. <sup>21</sup>And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins. <sup>22</sup>Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet,

\* See Nativity, pp. 67, 68.

*Matt. i. 18—25.*

saying, <sup>23</sup> Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us.

<sup>24</sup> Then Joseph, being raised

from sleep, did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his wife. <sup>25</sup> And knew her not till she had brought forth her first-born son. And he called his name Jesus \*.

## SECTION VII

### THE CITY OF DAVID

*Luke ii. 1—7.*

<sup>1</sup> And it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Cæsar Augustus, that all the world should be taxed. <sup>2</sup> And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governor of Syria. <sup>3</sup> And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city. <sup>4</sup> And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea, unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem; (because

he was of the house and lineage of David,) <sup>5</sup> to be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child. <sup>6</sup> And so it was, that while they were there, the days were accomplished that she should be delivered. <sup>7</sup> And she brought forth her first-born son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger; because there was no room for them in the inn†.

## SECTION VIII

### THE ANGELS AND THE SHEPHERDS

*Luke ii. 8—20.*

<sup>8</sup> And there were in the same the fields, keeping watch over country shepherds abiding in their flock by night. <sup>9</sup> And,

\* See Nativity, p. 77. † See Study of Gospels, pp. 317, 318.

*Luke ii. 8—20.*

lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid. <sup>10</sup>And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. <sup>11</sup>For unto you is born this day, in the city of David, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. <sup>12</sup>And this *shall be* a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling-clothes, lying in a manger. <sup>13</sup>And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying, <sup>14</sup>Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men.

<sup>15</sup>And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the

shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us. <sup>16</sup>And they came with haste, and found Mary and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger. <sup>17</sup>And when they had seen *it*, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this child. <sup>18</sup>And all they that heard *it* wondered at those things which were told them by the shepherds. <sup>19</sup>But Mary kept all these things, and pondered *them* in her heart. <sup>20</sup>And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them\*.

## SECTION IX

## THE CIRCUMCISION

*Luke ii. 21.*

<sup>21</sup>And when eight days were accomplished for the circumcising of the child, his name was called JESUS, which was so named of the angel before he was conceived in the womb.

\* See Nativity, p. 94.



## SECTION X

## THE GENEALOGIES\*

*Matt. i. 1—17.*

<sup>1</sup>The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.

<sup>2</sup>Abraham begat Isaac; and Isaac begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Judas and his brethren; <sup>3</sup>and Judas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar; and Phares begat Esrom; and Esrom begat Aram; <sup>4</sup>and Aram begat Aminadab; and Aminadab begat Naasson; and Naasson begat Salmon; <sup>5</sup>and Salmon begat Booz of Rachab; and Booz begat Obed of Ruth; and Obed begat Jesse; <sup>6</sup>and Jesse begat David the king;

And David the king begat Solomon of her *that had been the wife* of Urias; <sup>7</sup>and Solomon begat Roboam; and Roboam begat Abia; and Abia begat Asa; <sup>8</sup>and Asa begat Josaphat; and Josaphat begat Joram; and Joram begat Ozias; <sup>9</sup>and Ozias begat Joatham; and Joatham begat Achaz; and Achaz begat Ezekias; <sup>10</sup>and Ezekias begat Manasses;

*Luke iii. 23—38.*

<sup>23</sup>And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was *the son* of Heli, <sup>24</sup>which was *the son* of Matthat, which was *the son* of Levi, which was *the son* of Melchi, which was *the son* of Janna, which was *the son* of Joseph, <sup>25</sup>which was *the son* of Mattathias, which was *the son* of Amos, which was *the son* of Naum, which was *the son* of Esli, which was *the son* of Nagge, <sup>26</sup>which was *the son* of Maath, which was *the son* of Mattathias, which was *the son* of Semei, which was *the son* of Joseph, which was *the son* of Juda, <sup>27</sup>which was *the son* of Joanna, which was *the son* of Rhesa, which was *the son* of Zorobabel, which was *the son* of Salathiel, which was *the son* of Neri,

<sup>28</sup>Which was *the son* of Melchi, which was *the son* of Addi, which was *the son* of Cosam, which was *the son* of Elmodam, which was *the son*

\* See Nativity, pp. 104—122.

*Matt. i. 1—17.*

and Manasses begat Amon; and Amon begat Josias; <sup>11</sup>and Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon;

<sup>12</sup>And after they were brought to Babylon, Jechonias begat Salathiel; and Salathiel begat Zorobabel; <sup>13</sup>and Zorobabel begat Abiud; and Abiud begat Eliakim; and Eliakim begat Azor; <sup>14</sup>and Azor begat Sadoc; and Sadoc begat Achim; and Achim begat Eliud; <sup>15</sup>and Eliud begat Eleazar; and Eleazar begat Matthan; and Matthan begat Jacob; <sup>16</sup>and Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born JESUS, who is called Christ.

<sup>17</sup>So all the generations from Abraham to David *are* fourteen generations; and from David until the carrying away into Babylon *are* fourteen generations; and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ *are* fourteen generations.

*Luke iii. 23—38.*

of Er, <sup>29</sup> which was *the son* of Jose, which was *the son* of Eliezer, which was *the son* of Jorim, which was *the son* of Matthat, which was *the son* of Levi, <sup>30</sup> which was *the son* of Simeon, which was *the son* of Juda, which was *the son* of Joseph, which was *the son* of Jonan, which was *the son* of Eliakim, <sup>31</sup> which was *the son* of Melea, which was *the son* of Menan, which was *the son* of Mattatha, which was *the son* of Nathan, which was *the son* of David,

<sup>32</sup> Which was *the son* of Jesse, which was *the son* of Obed, which was *the son* of Booz, which was *the son* of Salmon, which was *the son* of Naasson, <sup>33</sup> which was *the son* of Aminadab, which was *the son* of Aram, which was *the son* of Esrom, which was *the son* of Phares, which was *the son* of Juda, <sup>34</sup> which was *the son* of Jacob, which was *the son* of Isaac, which was *the son* of Abraham, which was *the son* of Thara, which was *the son* of Nachor,

<sup>35</sup> Which was *the son* of Saruch, which was *the son* of Ragau, which was *the son* of Phalec, which was *the son* of Heber, which was *the son* of

*Luke iii. 23—38.*

Sala, <sup>36</sup> which was *the son of Cainan*, which was *the son of Arphaxad*, which was *the son of Sem*, which was *the son of Noe*, which was *the son of Lamech*, <sup>37</sup> which was *the son of Mathusala*, which was *the son of Enoch*, which was *the son of Jared*, which was *the son of Maleleel*, which was *the son of Cainan*, <sup>38</sup> which was *the son of Enos*, which was *the son of Seth*, which was *the son of Adam*, which was *the son of God*.

## SECTION XI

### THE COMING OF THE MAGI\*

*Matt. ii. 1—12.*

<sup>1</sup> Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea, in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.

<sup>2</sup> When Herod the king had heard *these things*, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. <sup>4</sup> And when he had

gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born? <sup>5</sup> And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judea: for thus it is written by the prophet, <sup>6</sup> And thou, Bethlehem, *in the land of Juda*, art not the least among the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come a Governor that shall rule my people Israel. <sup>7</sup> Then Herod, when he had privily called

\* See Nativity, pp. 122—124.

*Matt. ii. 1—12.*

the wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the star appeared. <sup>8</sup> And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the young child: and when ye have found *him*, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also.

<sup>9</sup> When they had heard the king, they departed; and lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was. <sup>10</sup> When they saw the star, they rejoiced

with exceeding great joy. <sup>11</sup> And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts; gold, and frankincense, and myrrh. <sup>12</sup> And being warned of God in a dream, that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

## SECTION XII

*THE PRESENTATION IN THE TEMPLE**Luke ii. 22—39.*

<sup>22</sup> And when the days of her purification, according to the law of Moses, were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present *him* to the Lord. <sup>23</sup> (As it is written in the law of the Lord, Every male that openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord.) <sup>24</sup> And to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtle doves, or two young pigeons.

<sup>25</sup> And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name *was* Simeon; and the same man *was* just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel: and the Holy Ghost was upon him. <sup>26</sup> And it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord's Christ. <sup>27</sup> And he came by the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him

*Luke ii. 22—39.*

after the custom of the law,  
<sup>28</sup> then took he him up in his  
 arms, and blessed God, and  
 said, <sup>29</sup> Lord, now lettest thou  
 thy servant depart in peace,  
 according to thy word: <sup>30</sup> for  
 mine eyes have seen thy sal-  
 vation, <sup>31</sup> which thou hast  
 prepared before the face of all  
 people; <sup>32</sup> a light to lighten  
 the Gentiles, and the glory of  
 thy people Israel. <sup>33</sup> And  
 Joseph and his mother mar-  
 velled at those things which  
 were spoken of him. <sup>34</sup> And  
 Simeon blessed them, and said  
 unto Mary his mother, Behold,  
 this *Child* is set for the fall and  
 rising again of many in Israel;  
 and for a sign which shall be  
 spoken against; <sup>35</sup> (yea, a  
 sword shall pierce through  
 thy own soul also,) that the

thoughts of many hearts may  
 be revealed.

<sup>36</sup> And there was one Anna  
 a prophetess, the daughter of  
 Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser:  
 she was of a great age, and had  
 lived with an husband seven  
 years from her virginity:  
<sup>37</sup> and she *was* a widow of  
 about fourscore and four years,  
 which departed not from the  
 temple, but served *God* with  
 fastings and prayers night and  
 day. <sup>38</sup> And she coming in  
 that instant, gave thanks like-  
 wise unto the Lord, and spake  
 of him to all them that looked  
 for redemption in Jerusalem.  
<sup>39</sup> And when they had per-  
 formed all things according to  
 the law of the Lord, they re-  
 turned into Galilee, to their  
 own city Nazareth\*.

## SECTION XIII

*THE FLIGHT INTO EGYPT**Matt. ii. 13—23.*

<sup>13</sup> And when they were de-  
 parted, behold, the angel of the  
 Lord appeareth to Joseph in a  
 dream, saying, Arise, and take  
 the young child, and his mo-  
 ther, and flee into Egypt, and

be thou there until I bring thee  
 word: for Herod will seek the  
 young child to destroy him.

<sup>14</sup> When he arose, he took the  
 young child and his mother  
 by night, and departed into

\* See Nativity, pp. 154, 155.



*Matt. ii. 13—23.*

Egypt: <sup>15</sup>and was there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, Out of Egypt have I called my son.

<sup>16</sup>Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently enquired of the wise men. <sup>17</sup>Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, <sup>18</sup>In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping *for* her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not\*.

<sup>19</sup>But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, <sup>20</sup>saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel; for they are dead which sought the young child's life. <sup>21</sup>And he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel. <sup>22</sup>But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judea, in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee†. <sup>23</sup>And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.

## SECTION XIV

### THE CHILDHOOD OF CHRIST

*Luke ii. 40—52.*

<sup>40</sup>And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon him.

\* See Nativity, p. 161.

<sup>41</sup>Now his parents went to Jerusalem every year at the feast of the passover. <sup>42</sup>And when he was twelve years old,

† See Study of Gospels, p. 319.

*Luke ii. 40—52.*

they went up to Jerusalem, after the custom of the feast.

<sup>43</sup>And when they had fulfilled the days, as they returned, the child Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem; and Joseph and his mother knew not *of it*.

<sup>44</sup>But they supposing him to have been in the company, went a day's journey; and they sought him among *their* kinsfolk and acquaintance.

<sup>45</sup>And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking him.

<sup>46</sup>And it came to pass, that after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions. <sup>47</sup>And all that heard him, were astonished at his understand-

ing and answers. <sup>48</sup>And when they saw him, they were amazed: and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing. <sup>49</sup>And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be about my Father's business? <sup>50</sup>And they understood not the saying which he spake unto them.

<sup>51</sup>And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject unto them: but his mother kept all these sayings in her heart. <sup>52</sup>And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and man.

## PART II

### The Baptism in Jordan

#### SECTION I

##### THE ETERNAL GENERATION OF CHRIST

*John i. 1—18.*

IN the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. <sup>2</sup>The same was in the beginning with God. <sup>3</sup>All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. <sup>4</sup>In him was life; and the life was the light of men. <sup>5</sup>And light shineth in darkness, and the darkness comprehended it not.

<sup>6</sup>There was a man sent from God, whose name *was* John. <sup>7</sup>The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all *men* through him might believe. <sup>8</sup>He was not that Light, but

*was sent* to bear witness of that Light. <sup>9</sup>*That* was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world. <sup>10</sup>He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. <sup>11</sup>He came unto his own, and his own received him not. <sup>12</sup>But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, *even* to them that believe on his name: <sup>13</sup>which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. <sup>14</sup>And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, and we beheld his glory, the



*John* i. 1—18.

glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth.

<sup>15</sup> John bare witness of him, and cried, saying, This was he of whom I spake, He that cometh after me is preferred before me: for he was before me. <sup>16</sup> And of his fulness

have all we received, and grace for grace. <sup>17</sup> For the law was given by Moses, *but* grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.

<sup>18</sup> No man hath seen God at any time: the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared *him*.

## SECTION II

*Matt. iii. 1—6.*

*Mark i. 1—6.*

The beginning of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God. <sup>2</sup>As it is written in the prophets; Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

In those days,

came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judea,

<sup>4</sup>John did baptize in the wilderness

<sup>2</sup>And saying, Repent ye, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

and preach the baptism of repentance, for the remission of sins.

<sup>3</sup>For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying,

<sup>3</sup>*As it is written in the Prophets;*

---

THE VOICE IN THE WILDERNESS

*Luke* iii. 1—6.

Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Cæsar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of Iturea, and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the tetrarch of Abilene,

<sup>2</sup>Annas and Caiaphas being the high priests, the word of God came unto John, the son of Zacharias, in the wilderness.

<sup>3</sup>And he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance, for the remission of sins;

<sup>4</sup>As it is written in the book of the words of Esaias the prophet, saying,

*Matt. iii. 1—6.*

The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

<sup>4</sup>And this same John had his raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins; and his meat was locusts and wild honey.

<sup>5</sup>Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judea,

and all the region round about Jordan,

<sup>6</sup>And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.

*Mark i. 1—6.*

<sup>3</sup>The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

<sup>6</sup>And John was clothed with camel's hair, and with a girdle of a skin about his loins; and he did eat locusts and wild honey.

<sup>5</sup>And there went out unto him all the land of Judea, and they of Jerusalem,

and were all baptized of him in the river of Jordan, confessing their sins.

*Luke* iii. 1—6.

The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

<sup>5</sup> Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low: and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough ways *shall be* made smooth;

<sup>6</sup> And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.

## SECTION III

*Matt. iii. 7—10.*

<sup>7</sup> But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them,

O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

<sup>8</sup> Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance;

<sup>9</sup> And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to *our* father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

<sup>10</sup> And now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees; therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

*Luke iii. 7—18.*

<sup>7</sup> Then said he to the multitude that came forth to be baptized of him,

O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

<sup>8</sup> Bring forth therefore fruits worthy of repentance,

and begin not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to *our* father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

<sup>9</sup> And now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees; every tree therefore that bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

<sup>10</sup> And the people asked him, saying, What shall we do then?

<sup>11</sup> He answereth and saith unto them, He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath meat, let him do likewise.

<sup>12</sup> Then came also publicans to be baptized, and said unto him, Master, what shall we do?

<sup>13</sup> And he said unto them, Exact no more than that which

---

*THE TEACHING OF THE BAPTIST*

*Luke* iii. 7—18.

is appointed you.

<sup>14</sup>And the soldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall we do? And he said unto them, Do violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely; and be content with your wages.

<sup>18</sup>And many other things in his exhortation preached he unto the people\*.

\* See Nativity, p. 220.

## SECTION IV

*Matt. iii. 11, 12.**Mark i. 7, 8.*

<sup>11</sup> I indeed baptize  
you with water unto repent-  
ance; but he that cometh  
after me is mightier than I,

whose shoes I am not worthy  
to bear: he shall  
baptize you with the Holy  
Ghost,  
and *with* fire.

<sup>12</sup> Whose fan *is* in his hand,  
and he will thoroughly purge  
his floor, and gather his wheat  
into the garner; but he will  
burn up the chaff with un-  
quenchable fire.

<sup>7</sup> And preached, saying,

<sup>8</sup> I indeed have baptized  
you with water;

there cometh one mightier  
than I after me, the latchet of  
whose shoes I am not worthy  
to stoop down and unloose: he  
shall baptize you with the  
Holy Ghost.

## SECTION V

*Matt. iii. 13—17.**Mark i. 9—11.*

<sup>9</sup> And

<sup>13</sup> Then cometh Jesus  
from Galilee

it came to pass  
in those days, that Jesus came  
from Nazareth of Galilee,



---

THE APPROACH OF CHRIST FORETOLD

*Luke* iii. 15—17.

<sup>15</sup>And as the people were in expectation, and all men mused in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ or not;

<sup>16</sup>John answered, saying unto *them* all, I indeed baptize you with water;

but one mightier than I cometh, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire.

<sup>17</sup>Whose fan *is* in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and will gather the wheat into his garner; but the chaff he will burn with fire unquenchable.

## CHRIST IS BAPTIZED

*Luke* iii. 21—23.

<sup>21</sup>Now when all the people were baptized, it came to pass that Jesus

*Matt. iii. 13—17.*

to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.

<sup>14</sup>But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?

<sup>15</sup>And Jesus answering, said unto him, Suffer *it to be so* now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him.

<sup>16</sup>And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water:

and

lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him.

<sup>17</sup>And lo, a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

*Mark i. 9—11.*

and was baptized of John in Jordan.

<sup>10</sup>And straightway coming up out of the water,

he saw the heavens opened, and the Spirit like a dove descending

upon him.

<sup>11</sup>And there came a voice from heaven, *saying*, Thou art my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

---

*Luke* iii. 21—23.

also being baptized

and praying,  
the heaven was opened.

<sup>22</sup>And the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven which said, Thou art my beloved Son, in thee I am well pleased.

<sup>23</sup>And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age\*.

\* See Nativity, p. 230.

## SECTION VI

*Matt. iv. 1—11.**Mark i. 12, 13.*

<sup>1</sup>Then was Jesus led up of the spirit into the wilderness,

<sup>12</sup>And immediately the spirit driveth him into the wilderness.

<sup>3</sup>And he was there in the wilderness

to be tempted of the devil.

forty  
days, tempted of Satan :  
and was with the wild beasts ;

<sup>2</sup>And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights,

he was afterward an hungered.

<sup>3</sup>And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.

<sup>4</sup>But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

<sup>5</sup>¶ Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple\* ;

<sup>6</sup>And saith unto him, If

\* See Nativity, pp. 252, 253.

## THE TEMPTATION

*Luke iv. 1—13.*

<sup>1</sup>And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the spirit into the wilderness,

<sup>2</sup>Being  
forty  
days tempted of the devil.

And in those days he did eat nothing:  
and when they were ended, he afterward hungered.

<sup>3</sup>And the devil said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread.

<sup>4</sup>And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word  
of God.

<sup>5</sup>And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinnacle of the temple; and said unto him, If thou

*Matt. iv. 1—11.*

thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down:

for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee:

and in *their* hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

<sup>7</sup>Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

<sup>8</sup>Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them;

<sup>9</sup>And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee,

if thou wilt fall down and worship me.

<sup>10</sup>Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan; for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

<sup>11</sup>Then the devil

*Luke iv. 1—13.*

be the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence;

<sup>10</sup>For it is written, He shall give his angels charge over thee: to keep thee.

<sup>11</sup>And in *their* hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

<sup>12</sup>And Jesus answering, said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

<sup>5</sup>And the devil taking him up into an high mountain, showed unto him all the kingdoms of the world,

in a moment.

<sup>6</sup>And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me, and to whomsoever I will I give it.

<sup>7</sup>If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine.

<sup>8</sup>And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

<sup>13</sup>And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he

*Matt. iv. 1—11.*

leaveth him.

*Luke iv. 1—13.*

departed from him

for a season\*.

*Matt. iv. 11.*

And behold, angels came  
and ministered unto him.

*Mark i. 13.*

And the angels ministered  
unto him.

## SECTION VII

### THE TESTIMONY OF JOHN

*John i. 19—34.*

<sup>19</sup>And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem, to ask him, Who art thou? <sup>20</sup>And he confessed, and denied not; but confessed, I am not the Christ. <sup>21</sup>And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou that prophet? And he answered, No†. <sup>22</sup>Then said they unto him, Who art thou? that we may give an answer to them that sent us: what sayest thou of thyself? <sup>23</sup>He said, I *am* the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the prophet Esaias. <sup>24</sup>And they which were sent were of the Pharisees. <sup>25</sup>And they asked

him, and said unto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, nor Elias, neither that prophet? <sup>26</sup>John answered them, saying, I baptize with water: but there standeth one among you, whom ye know not; <sup>27</sup>he it is, who coming after me, is preferred before me, whose shoe's latchet I am not worthy to unloose. <sup>28</sup>These things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.

<sup>29</sup>The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world. <sup>30</sup>This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man which is pre-

\* See Nativity, pp. 263, 264.

† See Nativity, pp. 266, 267.



*John i. 19—34.*

ferred before me: for he was before me. <sup>31</sup>And I knew him not: but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water. <sup>32</sup>And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon him. <sup>33</sup>And I

knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the Holy Ghost. <sup>34</sup>And I saw, and bare record, that this is the Son of God.

## SECTION VIII

*DISCIPLES BROUGHT TO CHRIST**John i. 35—51.*

<sup>35</sup>Again the next day after John stood, and two of his disciples; <sup>36</sup>and looking upon Jesus, as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lamb of God! <sup>37</sup>And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus. <sup>38</sup>Then Jesus turned, and saw them following, and saith unto them, What seek ye? They said unto him, Rabbi, (which is to say, being interpreted, Master,) where dwellest thou? <sup>39</sup>He saith unto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was about the tenth hour.

<sup>40</sup>One of the two which

heard John *speak*, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peter's brother. <sup>41</sup>He first findeth his own brother Simon, and saith unto him, We have found the Messias, which is, being interpreted, the Christ. <sup>42</sup>And he brought him to Jesus. And when Jesus beheld him, he said, Thou art Simon the Son of Jona; thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, A stone.

<sup>43</sup>The day following, Jesus would go forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and saith unto him, Follow me. <sup>44</sup>Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter.



*John i. 35—51.*

<sup>45</sup> Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, We have found him, of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets, did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph. <sup>46</sup>And Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him, Come, and see. <sup>47</sup>Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile! <sup>48</sup>Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast

under the fig-tree, I saw thee.

<sup>49</sup>Nathanael answered and said unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; thou art the King of Israel. <sup>50</sup>Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee under the fig-tree, believest thou? thou shalt see greater things than these. <sup>51</sup>And he saith unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Hereafter ye shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.

## SECTION IX

*THE MARRIAGE IN CANA OF GALILEE**John ii. 1—12.*

<sup>1</sup>And the third day\* there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there: <sup>2</sup>and both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the marriage. <sup>3</sup>And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine. <sup>4</sup>Jesus saith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with

thee? mine hour is not yet come. <sup>5</sup>His mother saith unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you, do *it*. <sup>6</sup>And there were set there six water-pots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins apiece. <sup>7</sup>Jesus saith unto them, Fill the water-pots with water. And

\* See Nativity, pp. 293, 294.

*John ii. 1—12.*

they filled them up to the brim. <sup>8</sup> And he saith unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto the governor of the feast. And they bare *it*.

<sup>9</sup> When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was: (but the servants which drew the water knew;) the governor of the feast called the bridegroom, <sup>10</sup> and saith unto him, Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine; and

when men have well drunk, then that which is worse: *but* thou hast kept the good wine until now. <sup>11</sup> This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth his glory; and his disciples believed on him.

<sup>12</sup> After this he went down to Capernaum, he, and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples: and they continued there not many days.

## PART III

### First Passover

TO THE END OF THE FIRST YEAR OF OUR LORD'S  
MINISTRY

#### SECTION I

THE CLEANSING OF THE TEMPLE

*John ii. 13—25.*

AND the Jews' passover was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem, <sup>14</sup>and found in the temple those that sold oxen and sheep, and doves, and the changers of money sitting. <sup>15</sup>And when he had made a scourge of small cords; he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen; and poured out the changers' money, and overthrew the tables: <sup>16</sup>and said unto them that sold doves, Take these things hence; make not my Father's house an house of merchandise. <sup>17</sup>And his disciples remembered that it was written, The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up.

<sup>18</sup>Then answered the Jews and said unto him, What sign shewest thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these things? <sup>19</sup>Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up. <sup>20</sup>Then said the Jews, Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days? <sup>21</sup>But he spake of the temple of his body. <sup>22</sup>When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this unto them; and they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

<sup>23</sup>Now when he was in Je-

*John ii. 13—25.*

rusalem at the passover, in the feast *day*, many believed in his name, when they saw the miracles which he did.

<sup>24</sup> But Jesus did not commit

himself unto them, because he knew all *men*, <sup>25</sup> and needed not that any should testify of man; for he knew what was in man.

## SECTION II

### NICODEMUS COMING BY NIGHT

*John iii. 1—21.*

<sup>1</sup> There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews. <sup>2</sup> The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him. <sup>3</sup> Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. <sup>4</sup> Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? <sup>5</sup> Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and *of* the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. <sup>6</sup> That which

is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. <sup>7</sup> Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again. <sup>8</sup> The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit. <sup>9</sup> Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be? <sup>10</sup> Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things? <sup>11</sup> Verily, verily, I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and ye receive not our witness. <sup>12</sup> If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe, if I tell

*John iii. 1—21.*

you *of* heavenly things?

<sup>13</sup> And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, *even* the Son of man which is in heaven. <sup>14</sup> And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: <sup>15</sup> that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life. <sup>16</sup> For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. <sup>17</sup> For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.

<sup>18</sup> He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. <sup>19</sup> And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. <sup>20</sup> For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved. <sup>21</sup> But he that doeth truth, cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

## SECTION III

*CHRIST IN THE LAND OF JUDEA \***John iii. 22—36.*

<sup>22</sup> After these things came Jesus and his disciples into the land of Judea; and there he tarried with them †, and baptized. <sup>23</sup> And John also was baptizing in Ænon near to Salim, because there was

much water there: and they came, and were baptized. <sup>24</sup> For John was not yet cast into prison.

<sup>25</sup> Then there arose a question between *some* of John's disciples and the Jews about

\* See Study of Gospels, pp. 323—326.

† See Nativity, pp. 337—347.

*John iii. 22—36.*

purifying. <sup>26</sup> And they came unto John, and said unto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou barest witness, behold the same baptizeth, and all *men* come to him. <sup>27</sup> John answered and said, A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven. <sup>28</sup> Ye yourselves bear me witness, that I said, I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him. <sup>29</sup> He that hath the bride is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, which standeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because of the bridegroom's voice; this my joy therefore is fulfilled. <sup>30</sup> He must increase, but I *must* decrease. <sup>31</sup> He that cometh

from above is above all: he that is of the earth is earthly, and speaketh of the earth: he that cometh from heaven is above all. <sup>32</sup> And what he hath-seen and heard, that he testifieth; and no man receiveth his testimony. <sup>33</sup> He that hath received his testimony, hath set to his seal that God is true. <sup>34</sup> For he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the Spirit by measure *unto him*. <sup>35</sup> The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand. <sup>36</sup> He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

## SECTION IV

*Matt. iv. 12.**Mark i. 14.*

<sup>12</sup> ¶ Now when Jesus had heard that John was cast into

<sup>14</sup> Now after that John was put in



*JOHN CAST INTO PRISON\***John* iv. 1—3.

<sup>1</sup>When therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptized more disciples than John, <sup>2</sup>(though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples,)

\* See *Nativity*, pp. 347—350.



*Matt. iv. 12.*

prison,

he departed into

Galilee.

*Matt. xiv. 3—5.*

<sup>3</sup> For Herod

had laid hold on  
John, and bound him, and put  
*him* in a prison, for

Herodias' sake, his brother  
Philip's wife.

<sup>4</sup> For John said unto him,  
It is not lawful for thee to  
have her.

<sup>5</sup> And when he would have  
put him to death, he feared  
the multitude, because they  
counted him as a prophet.

*Mark i. 14.*

prison,

Jesus came into

Galilee.

*Mark vi. 17—20.*

<sup>17</sup> For Herod himself

had sent forth and  
laid hold upon  
John, and bound  
him in prison for

Herodias' sake, his brother  
Philip's wife;  
for he had married her.

<sup>18</sup> For John had said unto  
Herod, It is not lawful for thee  
to have thy brother's wife.

<sup>19</sup> Therefore Herodias had a  
quarrel against him, and would  
have killed him; but she could  
not.

<sup>20</sup> For Herod feared John,  
knowing that he was a just  
man and an holy, and ob-  
served him; and when he  
heard him, he did many things,  
and heard him gladly.

---

*Luke* iv. 14.*John* iv. 1—3.

<sup>14</sup> ¶ And  
Jesus returned  
in the power of the spirit into  
Galilee.

<sup>3</sup> He left Judea, and  
departed again into  
Galilee.

*Luke* iii. 19, 20.

<sup>19</sup> But Herod the tetrarch,—

<sup>20</sup> added yet this above all,

that he shut up John in  
prison,—

<sup>19</sup> being reprov'd by him for  
Herodias his brother  
Philip's wife,

and for all the evils which  
Herod had done.

## SECTION V

## JESUS AT THE WELL OF SAMARIA

*John iv. 4—42.*

<sup>4</sup>And he must needs go through Samaria. <sup>5</sup>Then cometh he to a city of Samaria, which is called Sychar, near to the parcel of ground that Jacob gave to his son Joseph. <sup>6</sup>Now Jacob's well was there, Jesus therefore being wearied with *his* journey, sat thus on the well: *and* it was about the sixth hour.

<sup>7</sup>There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water. Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink. <sup>8</sup>For his disciples were gone away unto the city to buy meat. <sup>9</sup>Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans. <sup>10</sup>Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water. <sup>11</sup>The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and

the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that living water? <sup>12</sup>Art thou greater than our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattle? <sup>13</sup>Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again: <sup>14</sup>but whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him, shall never thirst: but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life. <sup>15</sup>The woman saith unto him, Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw. <sup>16</sup>Jesus saith unto her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither. <sup>17</sup>The woman answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband: <sup>18</sup>for thou hast had five husbands, and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: in that saidst thou truly. <sup>19</sup>The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a pro-

*John iv. 4—42.*

phet. <sup>20</sup> Our fathers worshipped in this mountain: and ye say, That in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship. <sup>21</sup> Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father. <sup>22</sup> Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews. <sup>23</sup> But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. <sup>24</sup> God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship *him* in spirit and in truth. <sup>25</sup> The woman saith unto him, I know that Messias cometh, which is called Christ, when he is come, he will tell us all things. <sup>26</sup> Jesus saith unto her, I that speak unto thee am *he*.

<sup>27</sup> And upon this came his disciples, and marvelled that he talked with the woman: yet no man said, What seekest thou? or, Why talkest thou with her? <sup>28</sup> The woman then left her water-pot, and went her way into the city, and

saith to the men, <sup>29</sup> Come, see a man, which told me all things that ever I did: Is not this the Christ? <sup>30</sup> Then they went out of the city, and came unto him.

<sup>31</sup> In the mean while his disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eat. <sup>32</sup> But he said unto them, I have meat to eat that ye know not of. <sup>33</sup> Therefore said the disciples one to another, Hath any man brought him *ought* to eat? <sup>34</sup> Jesus said unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work. <sup>35</sup> Say not ye, There are yet four months, and *then* cometh the harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; for they are white already to harvest. <sup>36</sup> And he that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternal: that both he that soweth, and he that reapeth, may rejoice together. <sup>37</sup> And herein is that saying true, One soweth, and another reapeth. <sup>38</sup> I sent you to reap that whereon ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entered into their labours.

<sup>39</sup> And many of the Sama-

*John iv. 4—42.*

ritans of that city believed on him, for the saying of the woman, which testified, He told me all that ever I did. <sup>40</sup> So when the Samaritans were come unto him, they besought him that he would tarry with them; and he abode there two days. <sup>41</sup> And

many more believed because of his own word; <sup>42</sup> and said unto the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy saying: for we have heard *him* ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.

## SECTION VI

### THE NOBLEMAN FROM CAPERNAUM

*John iv. 43—54.*

<sup>43</sup> Now after two days he departed thence, and went into Galilee. <sup>44</sup> For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no honour in his own country\*. <sup>45</sup> Then when he was come into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all the things that he did at Jerusalem at the feast: for they also went unto the feast. <sup>46</sup> So Jesus came again into Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine. And there was a certain nobleman, whose son was sick at Capernaum. <sup>47</sup> When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went unto him,

and besought him that he would come down, and heal his son: for he was at the point of death. <sup>48</sup> Then said Jesus unto him, Except ye see signs and wonders, ye will not believe. <sup>49</sup> The nobleman saith unto him, Sir, come down ere my child die. <sup>50</sup> Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way; thy son liveth. And the man believed the word that Jesus had spoken unto him, and he went his way. <sup>51</sup> And as he was now going down, his servants met him, and told *him*, saying, Thy son liveth. <sup>52</sup> Then enquired he of them the hour when he began to amend. And they said unto

\* See Nativity, p. 370.

*John iv. 43—54.*

him, Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him. <sup>53</sup> So the father knew that *it was* at the same hour in the which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth: and himself believed,

and his whole house. <sup>54</sup> *This is again the second miracle that Jesus did when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.*

## SECTION VII

### THE JUBILEE ANNOUNCED AT NAZARETH

*Luke iv. 14—30.*

<sup>14</sup> And there went out a fame of him through all the region round about. <sup>15</sup> And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all. <sup>16</sup> And he came to Nazareth\*, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath-day, and stood up for to read. <sup>17</sup> And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book he found the place where it was written, <sup>18</sup> The Spirit of the Lord *is* upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor: he hath sent me to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recover-

ing of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, <sup>19</sup> to preach the acceptable year of the Lord. <sup>20</sup> And he closed the book, and he gave *it* again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him. <sup>21</sup> And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears. <sup>22</sup> And all bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Joseph's son? <sup>23</sup> And he said unto them, Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, Physician, heal thyself: whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in

\* See Nativity, pp. 378, 379, and Study of Gospels, p. 329.



*Luke iv. 14—30.*

thy country. <sup>24</sup> And he said, Verily I say unto you, No prophet is accepted in his own country. <sup>25</sup> But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elias, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land; <sup>26</sup> but unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta, a city of Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow. <sup>27</sup> And many lepers were in Israel

in the time of Eliseus the prophet; and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian. <sup>28</sup> And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath, <sup>29</sup> and rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill (whereon their city was built), that they might cast him down headlong. <sup>30</sup> But he passing through the midst of them went his way.

## SECTION VIII

## THE CALL OF THE FOUR DISCIPLES \*

*Matt. iv. 13—16.*

<sup>13</sup> And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim. <sup>14</sup> That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, <sup>15</sup> The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthalim, by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles; <sup>16</sup> the people which sat in darkness, saw great light; and to them

*Luke iv. 31.*

<sup>31</sup> And he came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee.

\* See Nativity, pp. 397—402.



*Matt. iv. 13—16.*

which sat in the region and shadow of death, light is sprung up.

*Matt. iv. 17—22.*

<sup>17</sup> From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

<sup>18</sup> And Jesus, walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers.

<sup>19</sup> And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.

<sup>20</sup> And they straightway left *their* nets, and followed him.

<sup>21</sup> And going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, James *the son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets:

and he called them.

<sup>22</sup> And they immediately left the ship and their father, and followed him.

*Mark i. 14—20.*

<sup>14</sup> Preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God, <sup>15</sup> and saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye and believe the Gospel.

<sup>16</sup> Now as he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers.

<sup>17</sup> And Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.

<sup>18</sup> And straightway they forsook their nets, and followed him.

<sup>19</sup> And when he had gone a little farther thence, he saw James *the son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the ship mending their nets:

<sup>20</sup> And straightway he called them:

and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him.

## SECTION IX

## THE DEMONIAK HEALED

*Mark* i. 21—28.

<sup>21</sup>And they went into Capernaum; and straightway on the sabbath-day he entered into the synagogue,

and taught.

<sup>22</sup>And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes.

<sup>23</sup>And there was in their synagogue a man

with an

unclean spirit; and

he cried out,

<sup>24</sup>Saying, Let *us* alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God.

<sup>25</sup>And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him.

<sup>26</sup>And when the unclean spirit had

torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him.

<sup>27</sup>And they were all amazed,

*Luke* iv. 31—37.

<sup>31</sup>And

on the sabbath-days he

taught them.

<sup>32</sup>And they were astonished at his doctrine: for his word was with power.

<sup>33</sup>And in the synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an unclean

devil, and

he cried out with a loud voice,

<sup>34</sup>Saying, Let *us* alone; what have we to do with thee, *thou* Jesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art; the Holy One of God.

<sup>35</sup>And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him.

And when the devil had thrown him in the midst,

he came out of him, and hurt him not.

<sup>36</sup>And they were all amazed,

*Mark i. 21—28.*

insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What thing is this? what new doctrine is this? for with authority commandeth he even the unclean spirits, and they do obey him.

<sup>28</sup> And immediately his fame spread abroad throughout all the region round about Galilee.

*Luke iv. 31—37.*

and spake among themselves, saying,

What a word is this! for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits, and they come out.

<sup>37</sup> And the fame of him went out into every place of the country round about.

## SECTION X

*Matt.* viii. 14—17.

<sup>14</sup> And when Jesus was  
come

into Peter's house \*,

he saw his wife's  
mother laid, and sick of a  
fever.

<sup>15</sup> And he touched her  
hand, and

the fever left her: and  
she arose,  
and ministered unto them.

<sup>16</sup> When the even was  
come,  
they brought unto him many  
that were possessed with  
devils.

And he cast out the spirits  
with his word,

and healed all that  
were sick.

*Mark* i. 29—34.

<sup>29</sup> And forthwith, when they  
were come out of the syna-  
gogue, they entered  
into the house of Simon  
and Andrew, with James and  
John.

<sup>30</sup> But Simon's wife's  
mother lay sick of a  
fever, and anon they tell him  
of her.

<sup>31</sup> And he came and took  
her by the hand, and lifted  
her up; and immediately  
the fever left her, and

she ministered unto them.

<sup>32</sup> And at even †, when the  
sun did set,  
they brought unto him all that  
were diseased, and them  
that were possessed with  
devils.

<sup>33</sup> And all the city was  
gathered together at the door.

<sup>34</sup> And he healed many that  
were sick of divers diseases,

\* See Study of Gospels, p. 332.

† See Nativity, pp. 418, 419.

---

*THE EVENING OF THE SABBATH**Luke iv. 38—41.*

<sup>38</sup> And he  
arose out of the synagogue,  
and entered  
into Simon's house.

And Simon's wife's mother  
was taken with a great fever;  
and they besought him for  
her.

<sup>39</sup> And he stood over her,  
and rebuked the fever;

and  
it left her: and immediately  
she arose  
and ministered unto them.

<sup>40</sup> Now when the  
sun was setting,  
all they that had any sick with  
divers diseases brought them  
unto him;

and he laid his hands on  
every one of them,  
and healed them.

*Matt.* viii. 14—17.

*Mark* i. 29—34.  
and cast out many devils;

<sup>17</sup> That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare *our* sicknesses.

and suffered not the devils to speak, because they knew him.

## SECTION XI

*Matt.* iv. 23.—v. 1.

*Mark* i. 35—39.

<sup>35</sup> And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.

<sup>36</sup> And Simon, and they that were with him, followed after him.

<sup>37</sup> And when they had found him, they said unto him, All *men* seek for thee.

<sup>38</sup> And he said unto them,

*Luke iv. 38—41.*

<sup>41</sup> And devils also came out  
of many,

crying out, and saying,  
Thou art Christ the Son of  
God. And he rebuking *them*,  
suffered them not to speak :  
for they knew that he was  
Christ.

THE MOUNT OF BEATITUDES

*Luke iv. 42—44.*

<sup>42</sup> And when it was day,

he departed, and went  
into a desert place :

and the people sought him  
and came unto him, and  
stayed him, that he should  
not depart from them.

<sup>43</sup> And he said unto them,



*Matt.* iv. 23.—v. 1.

<sup>23</sup>And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues,

and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease,

among the people.

<sup>24</sup>And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatick, and those that had the palsy; and he healed them.

<sup>25</sup>And there followed him great multitudes of people from Galilee, and *from* Decapolis, and *from* Jerusalem, and *from* Judea, and *from* beyond Jordan.

<sup>1</sup>And seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain: and when he was set, his disciples came unto him.

*Mark* i. 35—39.

Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there also: for therefore came I forth.

<sup>39</sup>And he preached in their synagogues throughout all Galilee,

and cast out devils.

*Luke iv. 42—44.*

I must preach the kingdom  
of God to other cities also :  
for therefore am I sent.

<sup>44</sup>And he

preached in the  
synagogues of  
Galilee.

## SECTION XII

## THE BEATITUDES

*Matt. v. 2—16.*

<sup>2</sup>And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying, <sup>3</sup>Blessed *are* the poor in spirit: for their's is the kingdom of heaven. <sup>4</sup>Blessed *are* they that mourn: for they shall be comforted. <sup>5</sup>Blessed *are* the meek: for they shall inherit the earth. <sup>6</sup>Blessed *are* they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled. <sup>7</sup>Blessed *are* the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy. <sup>8</sup>Blessed *are* the pure in heart: for they shall see God. <sup>9</sup>Blessed *are* the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God. <sup>10</sup>Blessed *are* they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for their's is the kingdom of heaven. <sup>11</sup>Blessed are ye, when *men* shall revile you, and persecute *you*, and shall say all manner of evil against

you falsely, for my sake. <sup>12</sup>Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great *is* your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

<sup>13</sup>Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men. <sup>14</sup>Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. <sup>15</sup>Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. <sup>16</sup>Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

## SECTION XIII

## THE LAW AND THE PROPHETS FULFILLED

*Matt. v. 17—48.*

<sup>17</sup>Think not that I am the Prophets: I am not come come to destroy the Law, or to destroy, but to fulfil. <sup>18</sup>For

*Matt. v. 17—48.*

verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. <sup>19</sup> Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach *them*, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. <sup>20</sup> For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed *the righteousness* of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

<sup>21</sup> Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: <sup>22</sup> but I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. <sup>23</sup> Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought

against thee; <sup>24</sup> leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift. <sup>25</sup> Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. <sup>26</sup> Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.

<sup>27</sup> Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: <sup>28</sup> but I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. <sup>29</sup> And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not *that* thy whole body should be cast into hell. <sup>30</sup> And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast *it* from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not *that*

*Matt. v. 17—48.*

thy whole body should be cast into hell. <sup>31</sup> It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement: <sup>32</sup> but I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced, committeth adultery.

<sup>33</sup> Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths: <sup>34</sup> but I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne: <sup>35</sup> nor by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King. <sup>36</sup> Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. <sup>37</sup> But let your communication be, Yea, yea; nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil. <sup>38</sup> Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth: <sup>39</sup> but I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever

shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. <sup>40</sup> And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have *thy* cloke also. <sup>41</sup> And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain. <sup>42</sup> Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away. <sup>43</sup> Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy. <sup>44</sup> But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you and persecute you; <sup>45</sup> that ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. <sup>46</sup> For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same? <sup>47</sup> And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more *than others*? do not even the publicans so? <sup>48</sup> Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

## SECTION XIV

## ALMS, PRAYER, AND FASTING

*Matt. vi. 1—34.*

<sup>1</sup>Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven. <sup>2</sup>Therefore when thou doest *thine* alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. <sup>3</sup>But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth: <sup>4</sup>that *thine* alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret himself shall reward thee openly.

<sup>5</sup>And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites *are*: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. <sup>6</sup>But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father

which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. <sup>7</sup>But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen *do*: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. <sup>8</sup>Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. <sup>9</sup>After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. <sup>10</sup>Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as *it is* in heaven. <sup>11</sup>Give us this day our daily bread. <sup>12</sup>And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. <sup>13</sup>And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For *thine* is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. <sup>14</sup>For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: <sup>15</sup>but if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.



*Matt. vi. 1—34.*

<sup>16</sup> Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. <sup>17</sup> But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face; <sup>18</sup> that thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

<sup>19</sup> Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: <sup>20</sup> but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: <sup>21</sup> for where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. <sup>22</sup> The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. <sup>23</sup> But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness!

<sup>24</sup> No man can serve two

masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon. <sup>25</sup> Therefore

I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment?

<sup>26</sup> Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they? <sup>27</sup> Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature?

<sup>28</sup> And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin: <sup>29</sup> and yet I say unto you, That even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these.

<sup>30</sup> Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith? <sup>31</sup> Therefore take no thought, saying,



*Matt. vi. 1—34.*

What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Where-withal shall we be clothed? <sup>32</sup>(for after all these things do the Gentiles seek :) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. <sup>33</sup>But seek ye first

the kingdom of God and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you. <sup>34</sup>Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

## SECTION XV

## PROVERBIAL PRECEPTS OF THE GOSPEL

*Matt. vii. 1—29.*

<sup>1</sup>Judge not, that ye be not judged. <sup>2</sup>For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again. <sup>3</sup>And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? <sup>4</sup>Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and, behold, a beam is in thine own eye? <sup>5</sup>Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye.

<sup>6</sup>Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither

cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you.

<sup>7</sup>Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: <sup>8</sup>for every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. <sup>9</sup>Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone? <sup>10</sup>Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? <sup>11</sup>If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?

*Matt. vii. 1—29.*

<sup>12</sup>Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the Law and the Prophets.

<sup>13</sup>Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide *is* the gate, and broad *is* the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: <sup>14</sup>because strait *is* the gate, and narrow *is* the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.

<sup>15</sup>Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. <sup>16</sup>Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? <sup>17</sup>Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. <sup>18</sup>A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither *can* a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. <sup>19</sup>Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. <sup>20</sup>Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

<sup>21</sup>Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the

will of my Father which is in heaven. <sup>22</sup>Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? <sup>23</sup>And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

<sup>24</sup>Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: <sup>25</sup>and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. <sup>26</sup>And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: <sup>27</sup>and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it.

<sup>28</sup>And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine: <sup>29</sup>for he taught them as *one* having authority, and not as the scribes.

## SECTION XVI

## THE MIRACULOUS DRAUGHT OF FISHES

*Matt. viii. 1*

<sup>1</sup> When he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.

*Luke v. 1—11.*

<sup>1</sup> And it came to pass, that as the people pressed upon him to hear the word of God, he stood by the lake of Genesaret, <sup>2</sup> and saw two ships standing by the lake: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing *their* nets. <sup>3</sup> And he entered into one of the ships, which was Simon's, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land. And he sat down, and taught the people out of the ship.

<sup>4</sup> Now when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught. <sup>5</sup> And Simon answering said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless at thy word I will let down the net. <sup>6</sup> And when they had

this done, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes: and their net brake. <sup>7</sup> And they beckoned unto *their* partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the ships, so that they began to sink. <sup>8</sup> When Simon Peter saw *it*, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord. <sup>9</sup> For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken. <sup>10</sup> And so *was* also James, and John, the sons of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Jesus said unto Simon, Fear not; from henceforth thou shalt catch men. <sup>11</sup> And when they had brought their ships to land, they forsook all, and followed him\*.

\* See Nativity, pp. 489, 490.

## SECTION XVII

*Matt. viii. 2—4.**Mark i. 40—45.*

<sup>2</sup>And, behold, there came a  
leper,  
and worshipped

him,

saying, Lord, if thou wilt,  
thou canst make me clean.

<sup>3</sup>And Jesus  
put forth *his* hand,  
and touched him, saying,  
I will; be thou  
clean.

And

immediately his  
leprosy was  
cleansed.

<sup>4</sup>And Jesus saith unto him,  
See thou tell no  
man; but go thy way, shew  
thyself to the priest, and offer  
the gift  
that Moses commanded,  
for a testimony unto them.

<sup>40</sup>And there came a leper to

him, beseeching  
him, and kneeling  
down to him, and

saying unto him, If thou wilt,  
thou canst make me clean.

<sup>41</sup>And Jesus, moved with  
compassion, put forth *his*  
hand and touched him, and  
saith unto him, I will; be thou  
clean.

<sup>42</sup>And as soon as he had  
spoken, immediately the  
leprosy departed from him,  
and he was cleansed.

<sup>43</sup>And he straitly charged  
him, and forthwith sent him  
away;

<sup>44</sup>and saith unto him,  
See thou say nothing to any  
man: but go thy way, shew  
thyself to the priest, and offer  
for thy cleansing those things  
which Moses commanded,  
for a testimony unto them.

<sup>45</sup>But he went out, and be-  
gan to publish *it* much, and  
to blaze abroad the matter,

## THE LEPER HEALED

*Luke* v. 12—16.

<sup>12</sup>And it came to pass,  
when he was in a certain city,  
behold, a man full of leprosy :  
who seeing Jesus,  
fell on *his* face, and  
besought him,

saying, Lord, if thou wilt,  
thou canst make me clean.

<sup>13</sup>And he  
put forth *his* hand,  
and touched him, saying,  
I will : be thou  
clean :

and  
immediately the  
leprosy departed from him.

<sup>14</sup>And he charged him to  
tell no  
man ; but go, and shew  
thyself to the priest, and offer  
for thy cleansing, according  
as Moses commanded,  
for a testimony unto them.

<sup>15</sup>But so much the more  
went there a fame abroad of  
him :

*Mark i. 40—45.*

insomuch that Jesus could no more openly enter into the city, but was without in desert places : and they came to him from every quarter.

## SECTION XVIII

*Matt. ix. 2—8.*

*Mark ii. 1—12.*

<sup>1</sup>And again he entered into Capernaum, after *some* days : and it was noised that he was in the house.

<sup>2</sup>And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no room to receive *them*, no, not so much as about the door : and he preached the word unto them.

<sup>2</sup>And, behold, they brought to him a man sick

<sup>3</sup>And they come unto him, bringing one sick

*Luke v. 12—16.*

and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed by him of their infirmities.

<sup>16</sup>And he withdrew himself into the wilderness, and prayed.

*THE CURE OF THE PARALYTIC*

*Luke v. 17—26.*

<sup>17</sup>And it came to pass on a certain day, as he was teaching, that there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, which were come out of every town of Galilee, and Judea, and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was *present* to heal them.

<sup>18</sup>And, behold, men brought in a bed a man which was taken



*Matt. ix. 2—8.*

with the palsy,  
lying on a bed:

and Jesus seeing their  
faith, said unto the sick of  
the palsy, Son, be of good  
cheer, thy sins be forgiven  
thee.

<sup>3</sup>And, behold, certain of  
the scribes  
said within themselves;

This *man*  
blasphemeth.

<sup>4</sup>And  
Jesus knowing  
their thoughts,

said, Wherefore  
think ye evil

*Mark ii. 1—12.*

of the palsy,

which was borne of four.

<sup>1</sup>And when they could not  
come nigh unto him for the

press, they uncovered the  
roof where he was, and when  
they had broken *it* up,  
they let down

the bed  
wherein the sick of the palsy  
lay.

<sup>5</sup>When Jesus saw their  
faith, he said unto the sick of  
the palsy, Son,

thy sins be forgiven  
thee.

<sup>6</sup>But there were certain of  
the scribes sitting there, and  
reasoning in their hearts,

<sup>7</sup>Why doth this *man* thus  
speak blasphemies? who  
can forgive sins, but God  
only?

<sup>8</sup>And immediately, when  
Jesus perceived  
in his spirit, that  
they so reasoned within them-  
selves,

he said unto them, Why  
reason ye these things

*Luke* v. 17—26.

with a palsy ;

and they sought *means* to bring him in, and to lay *him* before him.

<sup>19</sup>And when they could not find by what *way* they might bring him in, because of the multitude, they went upon the house-top,

and let him down through the tiling, with *his* couch,  
into the midst before Jesus.

<sup>20</sup>And when he saw their faith, he said unto him,

Man,

thy sins are forgiven thee.

<sup>21</sup>And the scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying,

Who is this which speaketh blasphemies ? Who can forgive sins, but God alone ?

<sup>22</sup>But when Jesus perceived

their thoughts,

he answering,

said unto them, What reason ye

*Matt. ix. 2—8.*

in your hearts?

<sup>5</sup>For whether is easier to say,

*Thy* sins be forgiven thee;  
or to say, Arise,

and walk?

<sup>6</sup>But that ye may know  
that the Son of man hath  
power on earth to forgive  
sins,

(then saith he to the sick of  
the palsy,)

Arise,  
take up thy bed,  
and go unto thine  
house.

<sup>7</sup>And he

arose,

and departed

to his house.

<sup>8</sup>But when the multitude  
saw it, they  
marvelled,  
and glorified God,  
which had given such power  
unto men.

*Mark ii. 1—12.*

in your hearts?

<sup>9</sup>Whether is it easier to say  
to the sick of the palsy,  
*Thy* sins be forgiven thee:  
or to say, Arise,  
and take up thy bed,  
and walk?

<sup>10</sup>But that ye may know  
that the Son of man hath  
power on earth to forgive  
sins,

(he saith to the sick of  
the palsy,)

<sup>11</sup>I say unto thee,  
Arise, and  
take up thy bed,  
and go thy way into thine  
house.

<sup>12</sup>And immediately he  
arose,  
took up the bed, and went  
forth before them all;

insomuch that  
they  
were all amazed,  
and glorified God,  
saying, We never saw it on  
this fashion.

*Luke v. 17—26.*

in your hearts?

<sup>23</sup> Whether is easier to say,

Thy sins be forgiven thee;  
or to say, Rise up

and walk?

<sup>24</sup> But that ye may know  
that the Son of man hath  
power upon earth to forgive  
sins,

(he said unto the sick of  
the palsy,)

I say unto thee,  
Arise, and  
take up thy couch,  
and go unto thine  
house.

<sup>25</sup> And immediately he  
rose up before them, and  
took up that whereon he lay,  
and departed  
to his own house, glorifying  
God.

<sup>26</sup> And they  
were all amazed,  
and they glorified God,  
and were filled with fear,  
saying, We have seen strange  
things to-day.

## SECTION XIX

*Matt. ix. 9.*

<sup>9</sup>And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man, named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom: and he saith unto him, Follow me.

And he arose, and followed him.

*Mark ii. 13, 14.*

<sup>13</sup>And he went forth again by the sea-side; and all the multitude resorted unto him, and he taught them.

<sup>14</sup>And as he passed by, he saw Levi, the *son* of Alpheus, sitting at the receipt of custom, and said unto him, Follow me.

And he arose, and followed him.

*THE CALLING OF ST. MATTHEW \***Luke v. 27, 28.*

<sup>27</sup>And after these things he  
went forth,

and saw a publican, named  
Levi,  
sitting at the receipt of cus-  
tom; and he said unto him,  
Follow me.

<sup>28</sup>And he left all,  
rose up, and followed  
him.

\* See Nativity, pp. 511—514.

## PART IV

### The Second Passover

OR, THE BEGINNING OF THE SECOND YEAR OF OUR  
LORD'S MINISTRY

#### SECTION I

##### THE POOL OF BETHESDA

*John v. 1—9.*

**A**FTER this\* there was a feast of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. <sup>2</sup>Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep market a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five porches. <sup>3</sup>In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water. <sup>4</sup>For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole of whatsoever disease

he had. <sup>5</sup>And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight years. <sup>6</sup>When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time *in that case*, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole? <sup>7</sup>The impotent man answered him, Sir, I have no man when the water is troubled to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me. <sup>8</sup>Jesus saith unto him, Rise, take up thy bed, and walk. <sup>9</sup>And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked.

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 1, 2.



## SECTION II

## THE CHARGE OF BREAKING THE SABBATH

*John v. 9—16.*

<sup>9</sup>And on the same day was the sabbath. <sup>10</sup>The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured, It is the sabbath-day: it is not lawful for thee to carry *thy* bed. <sup>11</sup>He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take up thy bed, and walk. <sup>12</sup>Then asked they him, What man is that which said unto thee, Take up thy bed, and walk? <sup>13</sup>And he that was healed wist not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed himself

away, a multitude being in *that* place. <sup>14</sup>Afterwards Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee. <sup>15</sup>The man departed, and told the Jews that it was Jesus, which had made him whole. <sup>16</sup>And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the sabbath-day.

## SECTION III

## CHRIST THE RESURRECTION

*John v. 17—29.*

<sup>17</sup>But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work. <sup>18</sup>Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not only had broken the sabbath, but said also that God was his Father, making himself equal with God. <sup>19</sup>Then

answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise. <sup>20</sup>For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all

*John v. 17—29.*

things that himself doeth: and he will shew him greater works than these, that ye may marvel. <sup>21</sup>For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth *them*; even so the Son quickeneth whom he will. <sup>22</sup>For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son: <sup>23</sup>that all *men* should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son, honoureth not the Father which hath sent him. <sup>24</sup>Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from

death unto life. <sup>25</sup>Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. <sup>26</sup>For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself; <sup>27</sup>and hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man. <sup>28</sup>Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, <sup>29</sup>and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

## SECTION IV

### THE TESTIMONIES OF CHRIST

*John v. 30—47.*

<sup>30</sup>I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me. <sup>31</sup>If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not true.

<sup>32</sup>There is another that beareth witness of me; and I know that the witness which he witnesseth of me is true. <sup>33</sup>Ye sent unto John, and he bare witness unto the truth. <sup>34</sup>But I receive not testimony from man: but these things

## John v. 30—47.

I say, that ye might be saved.

<sup>35</sup> He was a burning and a shining light: and ye were willing for a season to rejoice in his light.

<sup>36</sup> But I have greater witness than *that* of John: for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me. <sup>37</sup> And the Father himself which hath sent me hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape.

<sup>38</sup> And ye have not his word abiding in you; for whom he hath sent, him ye believe not.

<sup>39</sup> Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life, and they are they which testify of me.

<sup>40</sup> And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life.

<sup>41</sup> I receive not honour from men. <sup>42</sup> But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you. <sup>43</sup> I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not. If another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. <sup>44</sup> How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that *cometh* from God only?

<sup>45</sup> Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is *one* that accuseth you, *even* Moses in whom ye trust. <sup>46</sup> For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: for he wrote of me.

<sup>47</sup> But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?

## SECTION V

*Matt.* xii. 1—8.

<sup>1</sup>At that time Jesus went  
on the sabbath-day

through the corn;

and his disciples  
were an hungred, and began  
to pluck the ears of corn,  
and to eat.

<sup>2</sup>But when the  
Pharisees saw *it*, they said  
unto him, Behold, thy dis-  
ciples do that which is not  
lawful to do upon the sabbath-  
day.

<sup>3</sup>But he  
said unto them, Have ye not  
read  
what David did when he  
was an hungred,  
and they that were with  
him,

<sup>4</sup>How he entered into the  
house of God,

and did eat  
the shew-bread,

which was not lawful for him

*Mark* ii. 23—28.

<sup>23</sup>And it came to pass,  
that he

went through the corn-fields  
on the sabbath-day;  
and his disciples

began, as they went,  
to pluck the ears of corn.

<sup>24</sup>And the  
Pharisees said  
unto him, Behold, why do  
they on the sabbath-  
day that which is not  
lawful?

<sup>25</sup>And he  
said unto them, Have ye never  
read  
what David did, when he  
had need, and was an hungred,  
he, and they that were with  
him?

<sup>26</sup>How he went into the  
house of God, in the days  
of Abiathar the high priest,  
and did eat  
the shew-bread,

which is not lawful

---

PLUCKING THE EARS OF CORN ON THE SABBATH-DAY

*Luke vi. 1—5.*

<sup>1</sup>And it came to pass on  
the second sabbath  
after the first\*, that he went  
through the corn-fields;

and his disciples

plucked the ears of corn,  
and did eat,  
rubbing *them* in *their* hands.

<sup>2</sup>And certain of the  
Pharisees said  
unto them, Why do ye that  
which is not  
lawful to do on the sabbath-  
days?

<sup>3</sup>And Jesus answering them,  
said, Have ye not  
read so much as this,  
what David did, when himself  
was an hungred,  
and they which were with  
him;

<sup>4</sup>How he went into the  
house of God,

and did take and eat  
the shew-bread, and gave also  
to them that were with him;  
which is not lawful

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 31—33, and Study of Gospels, p. 335.

*Matt. xii. 1—8.*

to eat, neither for them which were with him, but only for the priests?

<sup>5</sup> Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the sabbath-days the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are blameless?

<sup>6</sup> But I say unto you, That in this place is *one* greater than the temple.

<sup>7</sup> But if ye had known what *this* meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless.

<sup>8</sup> For the Son of man is Lord even of the sabbath-day.

*Mark ii. 23—28.*

to eat,

but for the priests, and gave also to them which were with him?

<sup>27</sup> And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath:

<sup>28</sup> Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

## SECTION VI

*Matt. xii. 9—14.*

<sup>9</sup> And when he was departed thence,

he went into their synagogue.

*Mark iii. 1—6.*

<sup>1</sup> And he entered again into the synagogue;

*Luke vi. 1—5.*

to eat,

but for

the priests alone?

<sup>6</sup>And he said unto them,

That the Son of man  
is Lord also of the sabbath.

*THE WITHERED HAND HEALED ON THE SABBATH*

*Luke vi. 6—11.*

<sup>6</sup>And

it came to pass also on another  
sabbath,

that he entered  
into the synagogue,  
and taught:



*Matt. xii. 9—14.*

<sup>10</sup> And, behold, there was a  
man which had *his*

hand withered.

And they asked him,

saying, Is it lawful to heal  
on the sabbath-days? that  
they might accuse  
him.

*Mark iii. 1—6.*

and there was a

man there which had a  
withered hand.

<sup>2</sup> And they

watched him,

whether he would heal him  
on the sabbath-day; that  
they might accuse  
him.

<sup>3</sup> And he saith unto the  
man which had the withered  
hand, Stand forth.

<sup>4</sup> And he saith unto them,

Is it lawful to do good on the  
sabbath-days, or  
to do evil?  
to save life, or to kill?  
But they held their peace.

<sup>11</sup> And he said unto them,  
What man shall there be  
among you that shall have  
one sheep, and if it fall into  
a pit on the sabbath-day, will  
he not lay hold on it, and  
lift it out?

<sup>12</sup> How much then is a man  
better than a sheep? Where-  
fore it is lawful to do well on  
the sabbath-days.

<sup>5</sup> And when he had looked  
round about on them with  
anger, being grieved for the

*Luke vi. 6—11.*

and there was a

man whose right  
hand was withered.

<sup>7</sup>And the scribes and  
Pharisees  
watched him,

whether he would heal  
on the sabbath-day; that  
they might find an accusation  
against him.

<sup>8</sup>But he knew their thoughts,  
and said to the  
man which had the withered  
hand, Rise up, and stand forth  
in the midst. And he arose  
and stood forth.

<sup>9</sup>Then said Jesus unto them,  
I will ask you one thing,  
Is it lawful on the  
sabbath-days to do good, or  
to do evil?  
to save life, or to destroy *it*?

<sup>10</sup>And looking round about  
upon them all,

*Matt. xii. 9—14.*

<sup>13</sup>Then saith he to the man,  
Stretch forth thine hand. And  
he stretched *it* forth;

and it was restored  
whole like as the other.

<sup>14</sup>Then the Pharisees went  
out

and held a council  
against him, how they might  
destroy him.

*Mark iii. 1—6.*

hardness of their hearts,

he saith unto the man,  
Stretch forth thine hand. And  
he stretched *it* out:

and his hand was restored  
whole as the other.

<sup>6</sup>And the Pharisees went  
forth, and straightway took  
counsel, with the Herodians  
against him, how they might  
destroy him.

## SECTION VII

### CHRIST RETIRES TOWARD THE SEA

*Matt. xii. 15—21.*

<sup>15</sup>But when Jesus knew *it*,  
he withdrew himself from  
thence\*:

and great multitudes  
followed him.

*Mark iii. 7—12.*

<sup>7</sup>But  
Jesus withdrew himself

with his disciples to the sea:  
and a great multitude from  
Galilee followed him,  
and from Judea,

<sup>8</sup>And from Jerusalem, and  
from Idumea, and *from* be-  
yond Jordan; and they about  
Tyre and Sidon, a great mul-  
titude, when they had heard  
what great things he did,  
came unto him.

\* See Study of Gospels, pp. 334, 335, and Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 44, 45.

*Luke vi. 6—11.*

he said unto the man,  
Stretch forth thy hand. And  
he did so :  
and his hand was restored  
whole as the other.

<sup>11</sup>And they were filled with  
madness ; and  
communed one with another  
what they might do to  
Jesus.

*Matt. xii. 15—21.*

and he healed them all ;

<sup>16</sup>And charged  
them that they should not  
make him known :

*Mark iii. 7—12.*

<sup>9</sup>And he spake to his disciples, that a small ship should wait on him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him.

<sup>10</sup>For he had healed many ; insomuch that they pressed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues.

<sup>11</sup>And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Son of God.

<sup>12</sup>And he straitly charged them, that they should not make him known.

*Matt. xii. 15—21.*

<sup>17</sup>That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying,

<sup>18</sup>Behold, my servant whom I have chosen; my beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased: I will put my Spirit upon him, and he shall show judgment to the Gentiles.

<sup>19</sup>He shall not strive nor cry; neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets.

<sup>20</sup>A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgment unto victory.

<sup>21</sup>And in his name shall the Gentiles trust.

*Matt. x. 2—4.*

## SECTION VIII

*Mark iii. 13—19.*

<sup>13</sup>And

he goeth up  
into a mountain,

and

calleth unto him  
whom he would: and they  
came unto him.

*ELECTION OF THE TWELVE APOSTLES**Luke vi. 12—16.*

<sup>12</sup>And it came to pass in those days that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.

<sup>13</sup>And when it was day, he called *unto him* his disciples :

*Matt. x. 2—4.*

<sup>2</sup> Now the names of the twelve apostles are these; The first Simon, who is called Peter,  
and Andrew his brother ;

James  
*the son* of Zebedee,  
and John his brother ;

<sup>3</sup> Philip and Bartholomew ;  
Thomas, and Matthew the publican ;  
James *the son* of Alpheus,  
and Lebbeus, whose surname was Thaddeus ;

<sup>4</sup> Simon the Canaanite,  
  
and Judas Iscariot,  
who also betrayed him.

*Mark iii. 13—19.*

<sup>14</sup> And he ordained twelve \*,

that they should be with him,  
and that he might send them forth to preach ;

<sup>15</sup> And to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils.

<sup>16</sup> And Simon he surnamed Peter ;

<sup>17</sup> And James  
*the son* of Zebedee,  
and John the brother of James,  
and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, The sons of thunder : <sup>18</sup> And Andrew, and Philip and Bartholomew,  
Matthew and Thomas,

and James *the son* of Alpheus,  
and Thaddeus,  
and Simon the Canaanite,

<sup>19</sup> And Judas Iscariot,  
which also betrayed him.

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 56—60.



*Luke vi. 12—16.*

and of them he chose twelve,  
whom also he named Apostles:

<sup>14</sup> Simon, whom he also  
named Peter,  
and Andrew his brother;  
James  
and John;

Philip and Bartholomew;  
<sup>15</sup> Matthew and Thomas;

James the *son* of Alphaeus,  
and Simon called Zelotes;

<sup>16</sup> and Judas  
*the brother* of James;  
and Judas Iscariot,  
which also was the traitor.

## SECTION IX

## THE SERMON ON THE PLAIN

*Luke vi. 17—26.*

<sup>17</sup> And he came down with them and stood in the plain\* ; and the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Judea and Jerusalem, and from the sea coasts of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear him, and to be healed of their diseases; <sup>18</sup> and they that were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed. <sup>19</sup> And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went virtue out of him, and healed *them* all. <sup>20</sup> And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said, Blessed *be ye* poor: for your's is the kingdom of God. Blessed *are ye* that weep now: for ye shall laugh. <sup>21</sup> Blessed *are ye* that hunger now: for ye shall be filled. <sup>22</sup> Blessed

are ye when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you *from their company*, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake. <sup>23</sup> Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy: for, behold, your reward *is* great in heaven: for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets. <sup>24</sup> But woe unto you that are rich! for ye have received your consolation. <sup>25</sup> Woe unto you that are full! for ye shall hunger. Woe unto you that laugh now! for ye shall mourn and weep. <sup>26</sup> Woe unto you, when all men shall speak well of you! for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

## SECTION X

## LAWS OF CHRISTIAN LOVE

*Luke vi. 27—38.*

<sup>27</sup> But I say unto you which good to them which hate you; hear, Love your enemies, do <sup>28</sup> bless them that curse you,

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 60.

*Luke vi. 27—38.*

and pray for them which despitefully use you. <sup>29</sup>And unto him that smiteth thee on the *one* cheek, offer also the other; and him that taketh away thy cloke, forbid not to take thy coat also. <sup>30</sup>Give to every man that asketh of thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods, ask *them* not again. <sup>31</sup>And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise. <sup>32</sup>For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love those that love them. <sup>33</sup>And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same. <sup>34</sup>And if ye lend to *them*, of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also

lend to sinners, to receive as much again. <sup>35</sup>But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil. <sup>36</sup>Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful. <sup>37</sup>Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: <sup>38</sup>give, and it shall be given unto you: good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal, it shall be measured to you again.

SECTION XI

LAWS OF SELF-CONDUCT

*Luke vi. 39—49.*

<sup>39</sup>And he spake a parable unto them, Can the blind lead the blind? shall they not both fall into the ditch? <sup>40</sup>The disciple is not above his master: but every one that is per-

fect, shall be as his master. <sup>41</sup>And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye? <sup>42</sup>Either how canst

*Luke vi. 39—49.*

thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thyself beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull out the mote that is in thy brother's eye. <sup>43</sup> For a good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruit: neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. <sup>44</sup> For every tree is known by his own fruit. For of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble bush gather they grapes. <sup>45</sup> A good man, out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is good: and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the

abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.

<sup>46</sup> And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say? <sup>47</sup> Whosoever cometh to me and heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like. <sup>48</sup> He is like a man which built an house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock. <sup>49</sup> But he that heareth and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation, built an house upon the earth, against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell, and the ruin of that house was great.

## SECTION XII

### THE CENTURION'S SERVANT\*

*Matt. viii. 5—13.*

*Luke vii. 1—10.*

<sup>1</sup> Now when he had ended all his sayings in the audience

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 83, 84.

*Matt. viii. 5—13.*

<sup>5</sup>And when Jesus was entered into Capernaum,

there came  
unto him a centurion,  
beseeching him,

<sup>6</sup>And saying, Lord, my servant lieth at home sick of the palsy, grievously tormented.

<sup>7</sup>And Jesus saith unto him,  
I will come and heal him.

<sup>8</sup>The centurion

answered and said,  
Lord,  
I am not worthy that thou  
shouldest come under my roof:

but speak the word only,

*Luke vii. 1—10.*

of the people, he  
entered into Capernaum.

<sup>2</sup>And a certain centurion's servant, who was dear unto him, was sick, and ready to die.

<sup>3</sup>And when he heard of Jesus, he sent  
unto him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him,  
that he would come and heal his servant.

<sup>4</sup>And when they came to Jesus, they besought him instantly, saying, That he was worthy for whom he should do this.

<sup>5</sup>For he loveth our nation, and he hath built us a synagogue.

<sup>6</sup>Then Jesus went with them. And when he was now not far from the house, the centurion

sent friends to him,  
saying unto him,  
Lord, trouble not thyself, for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter under my roof.

<sup>7</sup>Wherefore neither thought I myself worthy to come unto thee: but say in a word,

*Matt. viii. 5—13.*

and my servant shall be healed.

<sup>9</sup> For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me: and I say to this *man*, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth *it*.

<sup>10</sup> When Jesus heard *it*, he marvelled,

and said to them that followed, Verily, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

<sup>11</sup> And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven.

<sup>12</sup> But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

<sup>13</sup> And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way; and as thou hast believed, *so* be it done unto thee.

And his servant was healed  
in the self-same hour.

*Luke vii. 1—10.*

and my servant shall be healed.

<sup>8</sup> For I also am a man set under authority, having under me soldiers: and I say unto one, Go, and he goeth, and to another, Come, and he cometh: and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth *it*.

<sup>9</sup> When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that followed him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

<sup>10</sup> And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole that had been sick.



## SECTION XIII

### THE WIDOW'S SON AT NAIN

*Luke vii. 11—17.*

<sup>11</sup>And it came to pass the day after, that he went into a city called Nain\*; and many of his disciples went with him, and much people. <sup>12</sup>Now when he came nigh to the gate of the city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the city was with her. <sup>13</sup>And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not. <sup>14</sup>And he came and touched the bier;

and they that bare *him* stood still. And he said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise. <sup>15</sup>And he that was dead sat up, and began to speak. And he delivered him to his mother. <sup>16</sup>And there came a fear on all: and they glorified God, saying, That a great prophet is risen up among us: and, That God hath visited his people. <sup>17</sup>And this rumour of him went forth throughout all Judea, and throughout all the region round about.

## SECTION XIV

### MESSAGE FROM JOHN IN PRISON

*Matt. xi. 2—15.*

<sup>2</sup>Now when John had heard in the prison the works of Christ†,

he sent two of his disciples,

<sup>3</sup>And said unto him, Art

*Luke vii. 18—28.*

<sup>18</sup>And the disciples of John shewed him of all these things.

<sup>19</sup>And John calling *unto him* two of his disciples, sent *them* to Jesus, saying, Art

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 95

† See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 106.



*Matt. xi. 2—15.*

thou he that should come, or  
do we look for another?

<sup>4</sup>Jesus answered and said  
unto them, Go and  
shew John again those things  
which ye do hear and see.

<sup>5</sup>The blind receive their  
sight, and the lame walk, the  
lepers are cleansed, and the  
deaf hear, the dead are raised  
up, and the poor have the gos-  
pel preached to them.

<sup>6</sup>And blessed is *he* whoso-  
evershall not be offended in me.

<sup>7</sup>And as they  
departed, Jesus  
began to say unto the multi-  
tudes concerning John, What  
went ye out into the wilder-  
ness to see? A reed shaken  
with the wind?

<sup>8</sup>But what went ye out for  
to see? A man clothed in soft  
raiment? Behold, they that  
wear soft *clothing*

*Luke vii. 18—28.*

thou he that should come, or  
look we for another?

<sup>20</sup>When the men were come  
unto him, they said, John  
Baptist hath sent us unto  
thee, saying, Art thou he that  
should come, or look we for  
another?

<sup>21</sup>And in the same hour, he  
cured many of *their* infirmi-  
ties, and plagues, and of evil  
spirits, and unto many *that*  
*were* blind he gave sight.

<sup>22</sup>Then Jesus, answering,  
said unto them, Go your way,  
and tell John what things ye  
have seen and heard,

how that the blind  
see, the lame walk, the  
lepers are cleansed, the  
deaf hear, the dead are raised,  
to the poor the gospel is  
preached.

<sup>23</sup>And blessed is *he* whoso-  
evershall not be offended in me.

<sup>24</sup>And when the messengers  
of John were departed, he  
began to speak unto the peo-  
ple concerning John, What  
went ye out into the wilder-  
ness for to see? A reed  
shaken with the wind?

<sup>25</sup>But what went ye out for  
to see? A man clothed in soft  
raiment? Behold, they which  
are gorgeously apparelled, and  
live delicately,

*Matt. xi. 2—15.*

are in kings' houses.

<sup>9</sup> But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? yea, I say unto you, And more than a prophet.

<sup>10</sup> For this is *he* of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

<sup>11</sup> Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women, there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist: notwithstanding, he that is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he.

<sup>12</sup> And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force. <sup>13</sup> For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. <sup>14</sup> And if ye will receive *it*, this is Elias which was for to come. <sup>15</sup> He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

*Luke vii. 18—28.*

are in kings' courts.

<sup>26</sup> But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet.

<sup>27</sup> This *is he* of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

<sup>28</sup> For I say unto you, Among those that are born of women, there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist; but he that is least in the kingdom of God is greater than he.

## SECTION XV

## THE BAPTIST AND CHRIST BOTH REJECTED

*Matt. xi. 16—30.*

<sup>16</sup> But whereunto  
shall I liken  
this generation ?

It is like unto children sitting in the markets, and calling unto their fellows,

<sup>17</sup> And saying,  
We have piped unto you,  
and ye have not danced : we  
have mourned unto you, and  
ye have not lamented.

<sup>18</sup> For John  
came neither eating  
nor drinking, and they  
say, He hath a devil.

<sup>19</sup> The Son of man came  
eating and drinking, and they  
say, Behold, a man gluttonous,  
and a wine-bibber, a friend of  
publicans and sinners.

But wisdom is justified  
of her children.

*Luke vii. 29—35.*

<sup>29</sup> And all the people that  
heard *him*, and the publicans,  
justified God, being baptized  
with the baptism of John.  
<sup>30</sup> But the Pharisees and law-  
yers rejected the counsel of  
God against themselves, being  
not baptized of him.

<sup>31</sup> And the Lord said,  
Whereunto  
then shall I liken the men of  
this generation ?  
and to what are they like ?

<sup>32</sup> They are like unto children sitting in the market-place, and calling one to another,

and saying,  
We have piped unto you,  
and ye have not danced : we  
have mourned to you, and  
ye have not wept.

<sup>33</sup> For John the Baptist  
came neither eating bread  
nor drinking wine ; and ye  
say, He hath a devil.

<sup>34</sup> The Son of man is come  
eating and drinking ; and ye  
say, Behold, a gluttonous man,  
and a wine-bibber, a friend of  
publicans and sinners.

<sup>35</sup> But wisdom is justified  
of all her children.

*Matt. xi. 16—30.*

<sup>20</sup> Then began \* he to unbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not.

<sup>21</sup> Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.

<sup>22</sup> But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment than for you.

<sup>23</sup> And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained unto this day.

<sup>24</sup> But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment than for thee.

<sup>25</sup> At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes. <sup>26</sup> Even so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight. <sup>27</sup> All things are delivered unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and *he* to whomsoever the Son will reveal *him*.

<sup>28</sup> Come unto me, all *ye* that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.

<sup>29</sup> Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. <sup>30</sup> For my yoke *is* easy, and my burden is light.

## SECTION XVI

*THE SINNER ANOINTING CHRIST'S FEET †**Luke vii. 36—50.*

<sup>36</sup> And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 122, and Study of Gospels, pp. 336, 337.

† Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 129—132.

*Luke vii. 36—50.*

down to meat. <sup>37</sup>And, behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew that *Jesus* sat at meat in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster-box of ointment, <sup>38</sup>and stood at his feet, behind *him*, weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe *them* with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed *them* with the ointment. <sup>39</sup>Now when the Pharisee, which had bidden him, saw *it*, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who and what manner of woman *this is* that toucheth him: for she is a sinner. <sup>40</sup>And *Jesus* answering, said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on. <sup>41</sup>There was a certain creditor, which had two debtors: the one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty. <sup>42</sup>And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore which of them will love him most? <sup>43</sup>Simon answered and said, I

suppose that *he* to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged. <sup>44</sup>And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped *them* with the hairs of her head. <sup>45</sup>Thou gavest me no kiss: but this woman, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kiss my feet. <sup>46</sup>My head with oil thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment. <sup>46</sup>Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, *the same* loveth little. <sup>48</sup>And he said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven. <sup>49</sup>And they that sat at meat with him, began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth sins also? <sup>50</sup>And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee: go in peace.

## SECTION XVII

## CIRCUIT THROUGH GALILEE

*Luke* viii. 1—3.

<sup>1</sup>And it came to pass afterward, that he went throughout every city and village, preaching and shewing the glad tidings of the kingdom of God: and the twelve *were* with him; <sup>2</sup>and certain women, which had been healed of evil spirits

and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven devils, <sup>3</sup>and Joanna the wife of Chuza, Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministered unto him of their substance.



## PART V

### Christ with the Twelve

#### SECTION I

*Matt.* xii. 22—37.

*Mark* iii. 19—30.

<sup>19</sup>And they went into an house \*. <sup>20</sup>And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread. <sup>21</sup>And when his friends heard *of it*, they went out to lay hold on him: for they said, He is beside himself.

<sup>22</sup>Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blind and dumb: and he healed him, insomuch that the blind and dumb both spake and saw.

<sup>23</sup>And all the people were amazed, and said, Is not this the son of David?

<sup>24</sup>But when the Pharisees heard *it*,

<sup>22</sup>And the scribes which

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 141—144.



THE DEMONIAK HEALED AT CAPERNAUM

*Luke xi. 14, 15. 17—23.*

<sup>14</sup>And he was casting out  
a devil, and it was dumb.  
And it came to pass, when  
the devil was gone out, the  
dumb spake :  
and the people  
wondered.

<sup>15</sup> But some of

*Matt. xii. 22—37.*

they said, This *fellow* doth  
not cast out devils, but by  
Beelzebub, the  
prince of the devils.

<sup>25</sup>And Jesus knew their  
thoughts,

and said  
unto them,

Every kingdom  
divided against itself, is  
brought to desolation ;  
and every city or house  
divided against itself,  
shall not stand.

<sup>26</sup>And if Satan cast  
out Satan, he is  
divided against himself ;  
how shall then  
his kingdom stand ?

<sup>27</sup>And if I by Beelzebub  
cast out devils, by whom do  
your children cast *them* out ?  
therefore they shall be your  
judges.

<sup>28</sup>But if I cast out devils by  
the Spirit of God, then  
the kingdom of God is come  
unto you.

<sup>29</sup>Or else how can one enter  
into a strong man's house, and

*Mark iii. 19—30.*

came down from Jerusalem,  
said, He hath

Beelzebub, and by the  
prince of the devils casteth he  
out devils.

<sup>23</sup>And he

called them *unto him*, and said  
unto them in parables,  
How can Satan cast out  
Satan ?

<sup>24</sup>And if a kingdom be  
divided against itself, that  
kingdom cannot stand.

<sup>25</sup>And if a house be  
divided against itself that  
house cannot stand.

<sup>26</sup>And if Satan rise up  
against himself, and be  
divided,

he cannot stand,  
but hath an end.

<sup>27</sup>No man can enter  
into a strong man's house, and



*Matt. xii. 22—37.*

spoil his goods,  
except he first bind the  
strong man?

and then he will spoil his  
house.

<sup>30</sup> He that is not with me,  
is against me: and he that  
gathereth not with me, scat-  
tereth abroad.

<sup>31</sup> Wherefore I say unto you,  
All manner of sin and blas-  
phemy shall be forgiven unto  
men:

but the blasphemy *against*  
the *Holy* Ghost shall not be  
forgiven unto men.

<sup>32</sup> And whosoever speaketh  
a word against the Son of man,  
it shall be forgiven him:

but whosoever  
speaketh against the Holy  
Ghost, it shall not be forgiven  
him,  
neither in this world, neither  
in the *world* to come,

<sup>33</sup> Either make the tree  
good, and his fruit good; or  
else make the tree corrupt,

*Mark iii. 19—30.*

spoil his goods,  
except he will first bind the  
strong man:

and then he will spoil his  
house.

<sup>28</sup> Verily I say unto you,  
All sins shall be forgiven unto  
the sons of men, and blas-  
phemies

wherewith  
soever they shall blaspheme:

<sup>29</sup> But he that shall  
blaspheme against the Holy  
Ghost, hath never forgive-  
ness,

but is in danger of eternal  
damnation:

<sup>30</sup> Because they said, He  
hath an unclean spirit.

*Luke xi. 14, 15. 17—23.*

are in peace.

<sup>22</sup> But when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted,

and divideth his spoils.

<sup>23</sup> He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

*Matt. xii. 22—37.*

and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by *his* fruit. <sup>34</sup> O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. <sup>35</sup> A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out

of the evil treasure bringeth forth evil things. <sup>36</sup> But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof, in the day of judgment. <sup>37</sup> For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

## SECTION II

*THE PHARISEES SEEK A SIGN \***Matt. xii. 38—42.*

<sup>38</sup> Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee.

<sup>39</sup> But

he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign, and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas.

*Luke xi. 16. 29—36.*

<sup>16</sup> And others,

tempting *him*,

sought of him a sign

from heaven.

<sup>29</sup> And when the people were gathered thick together, he began to say,

This is an evil generation: they seek a sign; and there shall no sign be given it, but the sign of Jonas the prophet.

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 155, 15

*Matt. xii. 38—42.*

<sup>40</sup>For as Jonas was

three days and three nights in the whale's belly :

so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

<sup>41</sup>The men of Nineveh shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas ; and behold, a greater than Jonas *is* here.

<sup>42</sup>The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon ; and behold, a greater than Solomon *is* here.

*Luke xi. 16. 29—36.*

<sup>30</sup>For as Jonas was a sign unto the Ninevites,

so shall also the Son of man be

to this generation.

<sup>32</sup>The men of Nineve shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for they repented at the preaching of Jonas ; and behold, a greater than Jonas *is* here.

<sup>31</sup>The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with the men of this generation, and condemn them: for she came from the utmost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon ; and behold, a greater than Solomon *is* here.

<sup>33</sup>No man \* when he hath lighted a candle, putteth *it* in a secret place, neither under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that they which come in may see the light. <sup>34</sup>The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light ; but when

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 161—163.



*Luke xi. 16. 29—36.*

*thine eye* is evil, thy body also *is* full of darkness. <sup>35</sup>Take heed therefore, that the light which is in thee be not darkness. <sup>36</sup>If thy whole body therefore *be* full of light, having no part dark, the whole shall be full of light; as when the bright shining of a candle doth give thee light.

### SECTION III

#### THE UNCLEAN SPIRIT RETURNING

*Matt xii. 43—45.*

<sup>43</sup>When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none.

<sup>44</sup>Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out;

and when he is come, he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished.

<sup>45</sup>Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in, and dwell there: and the last *state* of that man

*Luke xi. 24—26.*

<sup>24</sup>When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest; and finding none,

he saith, I will return unto mine house from whence I came out.

<sup>25</sup>And when he cometh, he findeth it

swept and garnished.

<sup>26</sup>Then goeth he, and taketh *to him* seven other spirits more wicked than himself; and they enter in, and dwell there: and the last *state* of that man

---

*Matt. xii. 43—45.*

is worse than the first.

Even so shall it be also unto  
this wicked generation.

*Luke xi. 24—26.*

is worse than the first.

## SECTION IV

*Matt.* xii. 46—50.

<sup>46</sup> While he yet talked to the people,

behold,  
his mother and his brethren  
stood without,

desiring to speak with him.

*Mark* iii. 31—35.

31 There came then  
his brethren and his mother,  
and standing without,  
sent unto him, calling him.

<sup>32</sup>And the multitude sat about him,

<sup>47</sup> Then one said unto him,

and they said unto him,

Behold,  
thy mother and thy brethren  
stand without.

desiring

Behold,  
thy mother and thy brethren  
without

## OUR LORD'S MOTHER AND BRETHREN COME TO HIM

*Luke viii. 19.*

<sup>19</sup> Then came to him  
*his* mother and his brethren,

and could not come at him for  
the press.

*Luke xi. 27, 28\*.*

<sup>27</sup> And it came to pass, as he  
spake these things, a certain  
woman of the company lifted  
up her voice, and said unto  
him, Blessed *is* the womb that  
bare thee, and the paps which  
thou hast sucked. <sup>28</sup> But he  
said, Yea, rather blessed *are*  
they that hear the word of  
God, and keep it.

*Luke viii. 20, 21.*

<sup>20</sup> And it was told him *by*  
*certain*, which said,

Thy mother and thy brethren  
stand without,

desiring

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 163—170.

*Matt. xii. 46—50.*

to speak with thee.

<sup>48</sup> But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother ? and who are my brethren ?

<sup>49</sup> And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren !

<sup>50</sup> For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven,

the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

*Mark iii. 31—35.*

seek for thee.

<sup>33</sup> And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren ?

<sup>34</sup> And he looked round about on them which sat about him,

and said, Behold my mother and my brethren !

<sup>35</sup> For whosoever shall do the will of God,

the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

## SECTION V

### CHRIST DINES WITH A PHARISEE

*Luke xi. 37—54.*

<sup>37</sup> And as he spake, a certain Pharisee besought him to dine with him : and he went in, and sat down to meat \*. <sup>38</sup> And when the Pharisee saw *it*, he marvelled that he had not first washed before dinner. <sup>39</sup> And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the

platter ; but your inward part is full of ravening and wickedness. <sup>40</sup> Ye fools, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within also ? <sup>41</sup> But rather give alms of such things as ye have : and, behold, all things are clean unto you. <sup>42</sup> But woe unto you, Pharisees ! for ye tithe mint, and rue, and

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 175--177.

*Luke viii. 20, 21.*

to see thee.

<sup>21</sup>And he answered and said  
unto them,

My mother

and my brethren  
are these  
which hear the  
word of God,  
and do it.

*Luke xi. 37—54.*

all manner of herbs, and pass  
over judgment and the love  
of God: these ought ye to  
have done, and not to leave  
the other undone. <sup>43</sup>Woe  
unto you, Pharisees! for ye  
love the uppermost seats in  
the synagogues, and greetings  
in the markets. <sup>44</sup>Woe unto  
you, scribes and Pharisees,  
hypocrites! for ye are as  
graves which appear not, and

the men that walk over *them*  
are not aware *of them*.

<sup>45</sup>Then answered one of the  
lawyers, and said unto him,  
Master, thus saying, thou re-  
proachest us also. <sup>46</sup>And he  
said, Woe unto you also, *ye*  
lawyers! for ye lade men  
with burdens grievous to  
be borne, and ye yourselves  
touch not the burdens with  
one of your fingers. <sup>47</sup>Woe

*Luke xi. 37—54.*

unto you! for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers killed them.

<sup>48</sup> Truly ye bear witness, that ye allow the deeds of your fathers: for they indeed killed them, and ye build their sepulchres. <sup>49</sup> Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send them prophets and apostles, and *some* of them they shall slay and persecute: <sup>50</sup> that the blood of all the prophets which were shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation; <sup>51</sup> from the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zacha-

rias, which perished between the altar and the temple: verily I say unto you, It shall be required of this generation.

<sup>52</sup> Woe unto you, lawyers! for ye have taken away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in, ye hindered.

<sup>53</sup> And as he said these things unto them, the scribes and the Pharisees began to urge *him* vehemently, and to provoke him to speak of many things; <sup>54</sup> laying wait for him, and seeking to catch something out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.

## SECTION VI

*DISCIPLES WARNED AGAINST HYPOCRISY**Luke xii. 1—12.*

<sup>1</sup> In the mean time, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people\*, insomuch that they trode one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy.

<sup>2</sup> For there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed;

neither hid, that shall not be known. <sup>3</sup> Therefore whatsoever ye have spoken in darkness, shall be heard in the light; and that which ye have spoken in the ear in closets, shall be proclaimed upon the house-tops. <sup>4</sup> And I say unto you, my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that have no more that

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 185, 186.



*Luke xii. 1—12.*

they can do. <sup>6</sup> But I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear: Fear him, which, after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell: yea, I say unto you, Fear him. <sup>6</sup> Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God? <sup>7</sup> But even the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not therefore: ye are of more value than many sparrows. <sup>8</sup> Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels

of God. <sup>9</sup> But he that denieth me before men, shall be denied before the angels of God. <sup>10</sup> And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven. <sup>11</sup> And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and unto magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say: <sup>12</sup> for the Holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say.

## SECTION VII

*THE RICH MAN DYING SUDDENLY**Luke xii. 13—21.*

<sup>13</sup> And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me. <sup>14</sup> And he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge, or a divider over you? <sup>15</sup> And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth. <sup>16</sup> And he spake a parable unto them, saying,

The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully: <sup>17</sup> and he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits? <sup>18</sup> And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits, and my goods. <sup>19</sup> And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years,

*Luke xii. 13—21.*

take thine ease, eat, drink, *and* be merry. <sup>20</sup>But God said unto him, *Thou* fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be which thou hast provided? <sup>21</sup>So *is* he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.

## SECTION VIII

## DISCIPLES EXHORTED TO HEAVENLYMINDEDNESS

*Luke xii. 22—40.*

<sup>22</sup>And he said unto his disciples, Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat; neither for the body, what ye shall put on\*. <sup>23</sup>The life is more than meat, and the body *is more* than raiment. <sup>24</sup>Consider the ravens: for they neither sow, nor reap; which neither have store-house, nor barn; and God feedeth them: how much more are ye better than the fowls! <sup>25</sup>And which of you with taking thought, can add to his stature one cubit! <sup>26</sup>If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why take ye thought for the rest? <sup>27</sup>Consider the lilies how they grow: they toil not, they spin not; and yet I say unto you, that Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. <sup>28</sup>If then God so clothe the grass, which is to-day in the field, and to-morrow is cast into the oven: how much more *will he clothe* you, O ye of little faith? <sup>29</sup>And seek not ye what ye shall eat or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind. <sup>30</sup>For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things. <sup>31</sup>But rather seek ye the kingdom of God, and all these things shall be added unto you. <sup>32</sup>Fear not, little flock: for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom. <sup>33</sup>Sell that ye have, and give alms: provide yourselves bags which wax not old, a

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 197.

*Luke xii. 22--40.*

treasure in the heavens, that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth. <sup>34</sup>For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. <sup>35</sup>Let your loins be girded about, and *your* lights burning; <sup>36</sup>and ye yourselves like unto men that wait for their Lord, when he will return from the wedding; that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately. <sup>37</sup>Blessed *are* those servants, whom the Lord when he cometh, shall find watching: verily I

say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them. <sup>38</sup>And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find *them* so, blessed are those servants. <sup>39</sup>And this know, that if the good-man of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken through. <sup>40</sup>Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not.

## SECTION IX

*THE CHURCH EXHORTED TO WATCH**Luke xii. 41--59.*

<sup>41</sup>Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all \*? <sup>42</sup>And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom *his* lord shall make ruler over his household, to give *them their* portion of meat in due season? <sup>43</sup>Blessed *is* that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so

doing. <sup>44</sup>Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath. <sup>45</sup>But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the men-servants, and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken; <sup>46</sup>the Lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 205.

*Luke xii. 41—59.*

for *him*, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers. <sup>47</sup>And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not *himself*, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many *stripes*. <sup>48</sup>But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few *stripes*. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

<sup>49</sup>I am come to send fire on the earth, and what will I, if it be already kindled? <sup>50</sup>But I have a baptism to be baptized with, and how am I straitened till it be accomplished! <sup>51</sup>Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division. <sup>52</sup>For from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three. <sup>53</sup>The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father;

the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother; the mother-in-law against her daughter-in-law, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law.

<sup>54</sup>And he said also to the people, When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a shower; and so it is. <sup>55</sup>And when ye see the south wind blow, ye say, There will be heat; and it cometh to pass. <sup>56</sup>Ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky, and of the earth; but how is it that ye do not discern this time? <sup>57</sup>Yea, and why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right?

<sup>58</sup>When thou goest with thine adversary to the magistrate, *as thou art* in the way, give diligence that thou mayest be delivered from him; lest he hale thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer cast thee into prison. <sup>59</sup>I tell thee, thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast paid the very last mite.

## SECTION X

## THE GALILEANS SLAIN BY PILATE

*Luke* xiii. 1—9.

<sup>1</sup> There were present at that season some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. <sup>2</sup> And Jesus answering, said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such things? <sup>3</sup> I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish. <sup>4</sup> Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem? <sup>5</sup> I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall

all likewise perish.

<sup>6</sup> He spake also this parable; A certain *man* had a fig-tree planted in his vineyard; and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none.

<sup>7</sup> Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig-tree, and find none: cut it down; why cumbereth it the ground?

<sup>8</sup> And he answering, said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it: <sup>9</sup> and if it bear fruit, *well*: and if not, *then* after that thou shalt cut it down\*.

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 215, 216, and Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 315, 316.

## SECTION XI

*Matt.* xiii. 1—9. 24—30.

<sup>1</sup>The same day went Jesus  
out of the house, and sat

by the sea-side\*.

<sup>2</sup>And great multi-  
tudes were gathered together  
unto him,

so that he went into a ship,  
and sat;

and the whole multitude  
stood on the shore.

<sup>3</sup>And he spake  
many things unto them in  
parables, saying,

Behold, a  
sower went forth to sow;

<sup>4</sup>And when  
he sowed, some *seeds* fell by  
the way-side,

and the fowls  
came and devoured them up.

<sup>5</sup>Some fell upon stony  
places, where they had not  
much earth: and forthwith  
they sprung up, because they  
had no deepness of earth.

*Mark* iv. 1—9. 26—29.

<sup>1</sup>And he began again to  
teach by the sea-side;  
and there was a great multi-  
tude gathered  
unto him,

so that he entered into a ship,  
and sat in the sea;

and the whole multitude  
was by the sea,  
on the land.

<sup>2</sup>And he taught them  
many things  
by parables, and said unto  
them in his doctrine,

<sup>3</sup>Hearken;  
Behold, there went out a  
sower to sow:

<sup>4</sup>And it came to pass, as  
he sowed, some fell by  
the way-side,

and the fowls of the air  
came and devoured it up.

<sup>5</sup>And some fell on stony  
ground, where it had not  
much earth; and immediately  
it sprang up, because it had  
no depth of earth.

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 218.



---

THE PARABLES OF THE SOWER, THE SEED, AND THE  
TARES

*Luke viii. 4—8.*

<sup>4</sup>And when much people  
were gathered together, and  
                    were come to him  
out of every city,

he spake

by a parable:

<sup>5</sup>A sower went out to sow  
his seed;

                    and as

he sowed, some fell by  
the way-side;  
and it was trodden down,  
and the fowls of the air  
devoured it.

<sup>6</sup>And some fell upon a  
rock;

                    and as soon as  
it was sprung up,



*Matt. xiii. 1—9. 24—30.*

<sup>6</sup>And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away.

<sup>7</sup>And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them.

<sup>8</sup>But other fell into good ground,

and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold.

<sup>9</sup>Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

*Mark iv. 1—9. 26—29.*

<sup>6</sup>But when the sun was up, it was scorched; and because it had no root, it withered away.

<sup>7</sup>And some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up, and choked it, and it yielded no fruit.

<sup>8</sup>And other fell on good ground, and did yield fruit that sprang up and increased, and brought forth, some thirty, and some sixty, and some an hundred.

<sup>9</sup>And he said unto them, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

*Mark iv. 26—29.*

<sup>26</sup>And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground, <sup>27</sup>and should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how. <sup>28</sup>For the earth bringeth forth

fruit of herself; first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear. <sup>29</sup>But when the fruit is brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the harvest is come.

*Matt. xiii. 24—30.*

<sup>24</sup>Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good

seed in his field: <sup>25</sup>but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

*Luke viii. 4—8.*

it withered  
away,  
because it lacked moisture.

<sup>7</sup> And some fell among  
thorns; and the thorns sprang  
up with it, and choked it.

<sup>8</sup> And other fell on good  
ground,  
and sprang up,  
and bare fruit,

an hundredfold.  
And when he had said these  
things, he cried,  
He that hath ears to hear,  
let him hear\*.

*Matt. xiii. 24—30.*

<sup>26</sup> But when the blade was  
sprung up, and brought forth  
fruit, then appeared the tares  
also. <sup>27</sup> So the servants of the  
householder came, and said  
unto him, Sir, didst not thou  
sow good seed in thy field?  
from whence then hath it  
tares? <sup>28</sup> He said unto them,  
An enemy hath done this.  
The servants said unto him,  
Wilt thou then that we go

and gather them up? <sup>29</sup> But  
he said, Nay; lest while ye  
gather up the tares, ye root  
up also the wheat with them.  
<sup>30</sup> Let both grow together until  
the harvest: and in the time  
of harvest I will say to the  
reapers, Gather ye together  
first the tares, and bind them  
in bundles to burn them: but  
gather the wheat into my  
barn.

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 220—223.

## SECTION XII

*Matt. xiii. 31—35.*

<sup>31</sup> Another parable put he forth unto them, saying,

The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard-seed, which a man took and sowed in his field :

<sup>32</sup> Which indeed s the least of all seeds :

but when it is grown,  
it is the greatest among herbs,

and becometh a tree,  
so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.

<sup>33</sup> Another parable spake he unto them ; The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal till the whole was leavened.

<sup>34</sup> All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables \* ;

*Mark iv. 30—34.*

<sup>30</sup> And he said, Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God ? or with what comparison shall we compare it ?

<sup>31</sup> *It* is like a grain of mustard-seed, which when it is sown in the earth,

is less than all the seeds that be in the earth.

<sup>32</sup> But when it is sown, it groweth up, and becometh greater than all herbs, and shooteth out great branches ;

so that the fowls of the air may lodge under the shadow of it.

<sup>33</sup> And with many such parables spake he the word unto them, as they were able

\* See Study of Gospels, p. 114.

---

THE MUSTARD SEED AND THE LEAVEN

*Luke* xiii. 18—21 \*.

<sup>18</sup> Then said he,  
Unto what is the kingdom  
of God like? And whereunto  
shall I resemble  
it?

<sup>19</sup> It  
is like a grain of mustard-  
seed, which a man took, and  
cast into his garden;

and it  
grew and

waxed a great tree :  
and the fowls of the air  
lodged  
in the branches of it.

<sup>20</sup> And again he said, Where-  
unto shall I liken the king-  
dom of God?

<sup>21</sup> It is like leaven, which a  
woman took and hid in three  
measures of meal, till the  
whole was leavened.

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 227, 228.

*Matt. xiii. 31—35.*

and without a parable  
spake he not unto them.

<sup>35</sup> That it might be fulfilled  
which was spoken by the pro-  
phet, saying, I will open my  
mouth in parables; I will utter  
things which have been kept  
secret from the foundation of  
the world.

*Mark iv. 30—34.*

to hear it.

<sup>34</sup> But without a parable  
spake he not unto them :

and when they were alone,  
he expounded all things to  
his disciples.

## SECTION XIII

*Matt. xiii. 36. 10—23.*

<sup>36</sup> Then Jesus sent the mul-  
titude away, and went into  
the house.

<sup>10</sup> And

the disciples came, and said  
unto him,  
Why speakest thou unto them  
in parables ?

<sup>11</sup> He answered  
and said unto them,  
Because it is given unto you  
to know the mysteries of the  
kingdom of heaven, but to  
them

*Mark iv. 10—25.*

<sup>10</sup> And when he was alone,  
they that were about him  
with the twelve, asked of  
him

the parable.

<sup>11</sup> And he said unto them.  
Unto you it is given  
to know the mystery of the  
kingdom of God : but unto  
them that are without, all  
*these* things are done in

*PARABLE OF THE SOWER EXPLAINED**Luke viii. 9—18.*

And

his disciples asked  
him, saying,

What might this parable be?

<sup>10</sup> And he said,  
Unto you it is given  
to know the mysteries of the  
kingdom of God: but to  
others

in

*Matt.* xiii. 10—23.

it is not given.

<sup>12</sup>For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath.

<sup>13</sup>Therefore speak I to them in parables:

because they seeing, see not; and hearing, they

hear not,  
neither do they understand.

<sup>14</sup>And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive.

<sup>15</sup>For this people's heart is waxed gross, and *their* ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with *their* eyes, and hear with *their* ears, and should understand with *their* heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. <sup>16</sup>But blessed

are your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear.

<sup>17</sup>For verily I say unto you.

*Mark* iv. 10—25.

parables;

<sup>12</sup>That seeing they may see, and not perceive; and hearing they may hear,

and not understand;  
lest at any time they should be converted, and *their* sins should be forgiven them.



---

*Luke viii. 9—18.*

parables;

that seeing they might  
not see, and hearing they

might not understand.

*Matt. xiii. 10—23.*

That many prophets and righteous *men* have desired to see *those things* which ye see, and have not seen *them*; and to hear *those things* which ye hear, and have not heard *them*.

<sup>13</sup> Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower.

<sup>19</sup> When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth *it* not,  
then cometh  
the wicked *one*,

and catcheth  
away that which was sown  
in his heart.  
This is he which received seed  
by the way-side.

<sup>20</sup> But he that received the seed into  
stony places, the same is he  
that heareth the word, and  
anon

*Mark iv. 10—25.*

<sup>13</sup> And he said unto them,  
Know ye not this parable?  
and how then will ye know  
all parables?

<sup>14</sup> The sower soweth the word.

<sup>15</sup> And these are they  
by the way-side,  
where the word is sown; but  
when they have heard,

Satan cometh  
immediately,

and taketh  
away the word that was sown  
in their hearts.

<sup>16</sup> And these are they like-  
wise which are sown on  
stony ground; who, when they  
have heard the word, imme-  
diately

---

*Luke viii. 9—18.*

<sup>11</sup> Now the parable is this :  
The seed is the word of  
God.

<sup>12</sup> Those  
by the way-side,  
are they that hear ;

then cometh  
the devil

and taketh  
away the word out of their  
hearts,

lest they should believe, and  
be saved.

<sup>13</sup> They on the  
rock *are they*, which, when  
they hear,

*Matt.* xiii. 10—23.

with joy receiveth it;

<sup>21</sup> Yet hath he not root in himself,  
but dureth for awhile: for

when tribulation or persecution

ariseth because of the word,  
by and by he is offended.

<sup>22</sup> He also that received seed  
among the thorns, is he that  
heareth the word;

and the care of this  
world and the deceitfulness  
of riches,

choke the word, and he  
becometh unfruitful.

<sup>23</sup> But he that received seed  
into the good ground, is he  
that  
heareth the word, and under-  
standeth it,

which also beareth  
fruit, and bringeth forth, some  
an hundred-fold, some sixty,  
some thirty.

*Mark* iv. 10—25.

receive it with gladness;

<sup>17</sup> And have no root in them-  
selves, and so  
endure but for a time: after-  
ward

when affliction or persecution

ariseth for the word's sake,  
immediately they are offended.

<sup>18</sup> And these are they which  
are sown among thorns; such  
as hear the word,

<sup>19</sup> And the cares of this  
world, and the deceitfulness  
of riches, and  
the lusts of other things enter-  
ing in,

choke the word, and it  
becometh unfruitful.

<sup>20</sup> And these are they which  
are sown on good ground;  
such as

hear the word, and  
receive it, and

bring forth  
fruit, some  
thirty-fold, some sixty, and  
some an hundred.

<sup>21</sup> And he said unto them,  
Is a candle brought to be put  
under a bushel, or under a  
bed? and not to be set on a  
candlestick?

*Luke viii. 9—18.*

receive the word with joy ;  
and these have no root,  
which  
for a while believe,

and in time of temptation

fall away.

<sup>14</sup>And that which fell among  
thorns are they, which, when  
they have heard,  
go forth, and are choked  
with cares

and riches and  
pleasures of *this* life,

and  
bring no fruit to perfection.

<sup>15</sup>But that on  
the good ground are they,  
which, in an honest and good  
heart, having heard the word,

keep *it*, and  
bring forth  
fruit

with patience.

<sup>16</sup>No man, when he hath  
lighted a candle, covereth it  
with a vessel, or putteth *it*  
under a bed ; but setteth *it* on  
a candlestick, that they which  
enter in may see the light.

*Mark* iv. 10—25.

<sup>22</sup> For there is nothing hid, which shall not be manifested; neither was any thing kept secret, but that it should come abroad.

<sup>23</sup> If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.

<sup>24</sup> And he said unto them, Take heed what ye hear:

with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you: and unto you that hear, shall more be given.

<sup>25</sup> For he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he hath.

*Luke* viii. 9—18.

<sup>17</sup> For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest; neither *any thing* hid, that shall not be known and come abroad.

<sup>18</sup> Take heed therefore how ye hear:

for whosoever hath, to him shall be given; and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he seemeth to have.

## SECTION XIV

### PARABLE OF THE TARES EXPLAINED

*Matt.* xiii. 36—43.

<sup>36</sup> And his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field\*. <sup>37</sup> He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; <sup>38</sup> the field is

the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked *one*; <sup>39</sup> the enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 251, 252.

*Matt. xiii. 36—43.*

are the angels. <sup>40</sup> As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world.

<sup>41</sup> The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them

which do iniquity; <sup>42</sup> and shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. <sup>43</sup> Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun, in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

## SECTION XV

*PARABLES OF THE TREASURE, THE PEARL, AND THE NET*

*Matt. xiii. 44—52.*

<sup>44</sup> Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field; the which, when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

<sup>45</sup> Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchantman seeking goodly pearls: <sup>46</sup> who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

<sup>47</sup> Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind:

<sup>48</sup> which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away. <sup>49</sup> So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just, <sup>50</sup> and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

<sup>51</sup> Jesus saith unto them, Have ye understood all these things? They say unto him, Yea, Lord. <sup>52</sup> Then said he unto them, Therefore every scribe *which is* instructed unto



*Matt. xiii. 44—52.*

the kingdom of heaven, is like out of his treasure things new  
unto a man *that is* an house- and old.  
holder, which bringeth forth

## SECTION XVI

*Matt. xiii. 53.*

<sup>53</sup> And it came to pass,  
*that* when Jesus had finished  
these parables, he departed  
thence.

*Matt. viii. 18—22.*

<sup>13</sup> Now when Jesus saw  
great multitudes about him,

*Mark iv. 35.*

<sup>35</sup> And

the same day,  
when the even was come,

he gave commandment  
to depart unto the other  
side\*.

he saith unto them,  
Let us pass over unto the  
other side.

<sup>19</sup> And

a certain scribe came, and said  
unto him, Master, I will follow  
thee whithersoever thou goest.

<sup>20</sup> And Jesus saith unto him,  
The foxes have holes, and the  
birds of the air *have* nests;  
but the Son of man hath not  
where to lay *his* head.

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 267.

## TREATMENT OF DIFFERENT FOLLOWERS

*Luke viii. 22.*

<sup>22</sup> Now it came to pass on  
a certain day,

that he went into a ship with  
his disciples :

and he said unto them,  
Let us go over unto the other  
side of the lake.

*Luke ix. 57—62.*

<sup>57</sup> And it came to pass, that  
as they went in the way,  
a certain *man* said  
unto him, Lord, I will follow  
thee whithersoever thou goest.

<sup>58</sup> And Jesus said unto him,  
Foxes have holes, and  
birds of the air *have* nests;  
but the Son of man hath not  
where to lay *his* head.

*Matt. viii. 18—22.*

<sup>21</sup> And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.

<sup>22</sup> But Jesus said unto him, Follow me: and let the dead bury their dead.

## SECTION XVII

*Matt. viii. 23—27.*

<sup>23</sup> And when

he was entered into a ship,  
his disciples followed him\*.

*Mark iv. 36—41.*

<sup>36</sup> And when they had sent away the multitude, they took him even as he was in the ship.

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 273.

*Luke ix. 57—62.*

<sup>59</sup>And he said unto another,  
Follow me. But he said,

Lord,  
suffer me first to go and bury  
my father.

<sup>60</sup>Jesus said unto him,  
Let the dead

bury their dead;  
but go thou and preach the  
kingdom of God.

<sup>61</sup>And another also said\*,  
Lord, I will follow thee: but  
let me first go bid them fare-  
well which are at home at my  
house.

<sup>62</sup>And Jesus said unto him,  
No man having put his hand  
to the plough, and looking  
back, is fit for the kingdom  
of God.

*THE TEMPEST STILLED ON THE LAKE*

*Luke viii. 22—25.*

<sup>22</sup>And they launched forth.

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 268.

*Matt.* viii. 23—27.

<sup>24</sup>And, behold, there arose  
a great tempest in the sea,  
insomuch that the ship was  
covered with the waves :

but he was asleep.

<sup>25</sup>And his disciples came  
to *him*, and awoke him,  
saying, Lord,

save us :

we perish.

<sup>26</sup>And he saith unto them,  
Why are ye fearful, O ye  
of little faith ?

Then he arose, and re-  
buked the winds and the sea;  
and there was a great calm.

<sup>27</sup> But the men

marvelled,

saying,

What manner of man is  
this, that  
even the winds and the sea

obey him !

*Mark* iv. 36—41.

And there were also with him  
other little ships.

<sup>37</sup>And there arose  
a great storm of wind, and  
the waves beat into the ship,  
so that it was now full.

<sup>38</sup>And he was in the hinder  
part of the ship, asleep on  
a pillow :

and they awake him,  
and say unto him, Master,

carest thou not that

we perish ?

<sup>39</sup>And he arose, and rebuked  
the winds, and said unto the  
sea,

Peace, be still.

And the wind ceased,  
and there was a great calm.

<sup>40</sup>And he said unto them,  
Why are ye so fearful ? how  
is it that ye have no faith ?

<sup>41</sup>And they  
feared exceedingly, and

said one to another,

What manner of man is  
this, that  
even the wind and the sea

obey him ?

*Luke* viii. 22—25.

<sup>23</sup> But as they sailed,  
he fell asleep.

And there came down  
a storm of wind on the lake ;

and they were filled *with water*,  
and were in jeopardy.

<sup>24</sup> And they came  
to him, and awoke him,  
saying, Master, master,

we perish.

Then he arose, and re-  
buked the wind and the  
raging of the water :

and they ceased,  
and there was a calm.

<sup>25</sup> And he said unto them,  
Where is  
your faith ?

And they  
being afraid,  
wondered,  
saying one to another,

What manner of man is  
this ? for he commandeth  
even the winds and *water*,  
and they  
obey him,

## SECTION XVIII

*Matt. viii. 28—34.*

<sup>28</sup> And when he was come  
to the other side, into the  
country of the Gergesenes,

there met him

two \* possessed with devils,

coming out of the tombs,  
exceeding fierce, so that no  
man might pass by that way.

*Mark v. 1—20.*

<sup>1</sup> And they came over unto  
the other side of the sea, into  
the country of the Gadarenes.

<sup>2</sup> And when he was come  
out of the ship immediately  
there met him  
out of the tombs

a man with an unclean spirit,

<sup>3</sup> Who had *his* dwelling  
among the tombs :

and no man could bind him,  
no, not with chains :

<sup>4</sup> Because that he had been  
often

bound with fetters and chains,  
and the chains had been  
plucked asunder by him, and  
the fetters broken in pieces :  
neither could any *man* tame  
him.

<sup>5</sup> And always, night and day,  
he was in the mountains, and  
in the tombs, crying, and cut-

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 277, 278.



## THE DEMONIACS AMONG THE GADARENES

*Luke* viii. 26—39.

<sup>26</sup>And they arrived at

the country of the Gadarenes,  
which is over against Galilee.

<sup>27</sup>And when he went forth  
to land,

there met him  
out of the city

a certain man which had devils  
long time, and ware no clothes,  
neither abode in *any* house,  
but in the tombs.

<sup>29</sup> For

oftentimes  
it had caught him : and he  
was kept  
bound with chains, and in fet-  
ters ; and

he brake the bands,

and was driven of the devil  
into the wilderness.

*Matt. viii. 28—34.*

<sup>29</sup>And behold, they cried out,

saying,

What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time?

<sup>30</sup>And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine feeding.

<sup>31</sup>So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine.

<sup>32</sup>And he said unto them, Go.

*Mark v. 1—20.*

ting himself with stones.

<sup>6</sup>But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran

and

worshipped him.

<sup>7</sup>And cried with a loud voice, and

said,

What have I to do with thee, Jesus, *thou* Son of the most high God?

I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not.

<sup>8</sup>For he said unto him, Come out of the man, *thou* unclean spirit.

<sup>9</sup>And he asked him,

What is thy name? And he answered, saying,

My name *is*

Legion: for we are many.

<sup>10</sup>And he besought him much, that he would not send them away out of the country.

<sup>11</sup>Now there was there, nigh unto the mountains, a great herd of swine feeding.

<sup>12</sup>And all the devils besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them.

<sup>13</sup>And forthwith Jesus gave them leave.

*Luke* viii. 26—39.

<sup>28</sup> When he saw Jesus,

he cried out, and fell down  
before him,

and with a loud  
voice  
said,

What have I to do with  
thee, Jesus, *thou* Son of God  
most high?

I beseech thee  
torment me not.

<sup>29</sup> For he had commanded  
the unclean spirit to come  
out of the man.

<sup>30</sup> And Jesus asked him,  
saying,

What is thy name? And  
he said,

Legion : because many devils  
were entered into him.

<sup>31</sup> And they besought him,  
that he would not command  
them to go out into the deep.

<sup>32</sup> And there was there

an herd of many swine feeding  
on the mountain :

and they besought  
him that he would suffer them  
to enter into  
them.

And he suffered them.

*Matt.* viii. 28—34.

And when they were come out,  
they went into the herd of swine: and, behold,  
the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea,

and perished in the waters.

<sup>33</sup>And they that kept them fled,

and went their ways into the city,

and told every thing; and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils.

<sup>34</sup>And, behold,

the whole city came out to meet Jesus: and when they saw him, they besought *him* that he would depart out of

*Mark* v. 1—20.

And the unclean spirits went out,

and entered into the swine: and the herd

ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand,)

and were choked in the sea.

<sup>14</sup>And they that fed the swine fled,

and told *it* in the city, and in the country.

And they went out to see what it was that was done.

<sup>15</sup>And they come to Jesus, and see him that was possessed with the devil, and had the legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid.

<sup>16</sup>And they that saw *it*, told them how it befel to him that was possessed with the devil, and *also* concerning the swine.

<sup>17</sup>And they began to pray him to depart out of

*Luke viii. 26—39.*

<sup>33</sup> Then went the devils out  
of the man,  
and entered into the  
swine : and  
the herd  
ran violently down a steep  
place into the lake,

and were choked.

<sup>34</sup> When they that fed *them*  
saw what was done, they fled,  
and went  
and told *it* in the city  
and in the country.

<sup>35</sup> Then they went out to see  
what was done;

and came to Jesus,  
and found the man, out of  
whom the devils were departed,  
sitting at the feet of Jesus,  
clothed, and in his right  
mind : and they were afraid.

<sup>36</sup> They also which saw *it*,  
told them by what means  
he that was possessed of the  
devil was healed.

<sup>37</sup> Then the whole multitude  
of the country of the Gada-  
renes round about,

besought him  
to depart

*Matt.* viii. 28—34.  
their coasts.

*Mark* v. 1—20.  
their coasts.

<sup>18</sup> And when  
he was come into the ship,

he that had been possessed  
with the devil  
prayed him that he might be  
with him.

<sup>19</sup> Howbeit, Jesus suffered  
him not,

but saith unto him,  
Go home to thy friends, and  
tell them how great things  
the Lord hath done for thee,  
and hath had compassion on  
thee.

<sup>20</sup> And he departed, and  
began to publish in Decapolis  
how great things Jesus had  
done for him: and all *men* did  
marvel.

## SECTION XIX

*Matt.* ix. 1.  
<sup>1</sup> And he entered into a  
ship, and passed over, and  
came into his own city.

*Mark* v. 21.

<sup>21</sup> And when Jesus was

*Luke viii. 26—39.*

from them :

for they were taken with great fear.

And he went up into the ship, and returned back again.

<sup>38</sup> Now the man, out of whom the devils were departed, besought him that he might be with him.

But Jesus sent him away,

saying,

<sup>39</sup> Return to thine own house, and show how great things God hath done unto thee.

And he went his way, and published throughout the whole city, how great things Jesus had done unto him.

*THE FEAST AT THE HOUSE OF LEVI \**

*Luke viii. 40.*

<sup>40</sup> And it came to pass that

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 287, 288.



*Mark v. 21.*

passed over again by ship  
unto the other side, much  
people gathered unto him :

*Matt. ix. 10—17.*

<sup>10</sup> And it came to pass,  
as Jesus sat at meat in the  
house,

behold,

many publicans  
and sinners came, and sat  
down with him and his  
disciples.

<sup>11</sup> And when the  
Pharisees saw *it*,

they said unto his  
disciples,

Why

eateth your Master with pub-  
licans and sinners ?

<sup>12</sup> But when Jesus heard  
*that*, he said unto them, They  
that be whole need not a  
physician, but they that are  
sick.

<sup>13</sup> But go ye and learn what  
*that* meaneth, I will have  
mercy, and not sacrifice :  
for I am not come to call  
the righteous, but sinners to

*Mark ii. 15—22.*

<sup>15</sup> And it came to pass,  
that as Jesus sat at meat in his  
house,

many publicans

and sinners sat also  
together with Jesus and his  
disciples ; for there were  
many, and they followed him.

<sup>16</sup> And when the scribes and  
Pharisees saw him eat with  
publicans and sinners,

they said unto his  
disciples,

How is it that he

eateth and drinketh with pub-  
licans and sinners ?

<sup>17</sup> When Jesus heard  
*it*, he saith unto them, They  
that are whole have no need  
of the physician, but they that  
are sick :

I came not to call  
the righteous, but sinners to

*Luke viii. 40.*

when Jesus was returned, the

people

*gladly* received him, for they

were all waiting for him.

*Luke v. 29—39.*

<sup>29</sup> And Levi made him a  
great feast

in his own

house :

and there was a

great company of publicans,

and of others that sat

down with

them.

<sup>30</sup> But their scribes and  
Pharisees

murmured against his  
disciples, saying,

Why

do ye

eat and drink with publicans

and sinners ?

<sup>31</sup> And Jesus answering,  
said unto them, They  
that are whole need not a  
physician : but they that are  
sick.

<sup>32</sup> I came not to call  
the righteous, but sinners to

*Matt. ix. 10—17.*

repentance.

<sup>14</sup>Then came to him the  
disciples of John, saying,  
Why do we  
and  
the Pharisees fast oft,

but thy disciples fast not?

<sup>15</sup>And Jesus said unto them,  
Can the children of the  
bridechamber mourn, as long  
as the bridegroom is with  
them?

but the days will come,  
when the bridegroom shall be  
taken from them, and then  
shall they fast.

<sup>16</sup>No man putteth a piece  
of new cloth unto an old gar-  
ment: for that which is put  
in to fill it up, taketh from  
the garment,

and the rent is made worse.

<sup>17</sup>Neither do men put new

*Mark ii. 15—22.*

repentance.

<sup>18</sup>And the disciples of John  
and of the Pharisees used to  
fast:

and they come  
and say unto him,  
Why do the disciples of John  
and of  
the Pharisees fast,

but thy disciples fast not?

<sup>19</sup>And Jesus said unto them,  
Can the children of the  
bridechamber fast, while  
the bridegroom is with  
them?

as long as they have the  
bridegroom with them, they  
cannot fast.

<sup>20</sup>But the days will come,  
when the bridegroom shall be  
taken away from them, and  
then shall they fast  
in those days.

<sup>21</sup>No man also seweth a piece  
of new cloth on an old gar-  
ment: else the new piece that  
filled it up, taketh away from  
the old,

and the rent is made worse.

<sup>22</sup>And no man putteth new

Luke v. 29—39.

repentance.

<sup>33</sup> And they  
said unto him,  
Why do the disciples of John  
fast often, and make prayers,  
and likewise *the disciples* of  
the Pharisees,

but thine  
eat and drink ?

<sup>34</sup> And he said unto them,  
Can ye make the children of  
the bridechamber fast, while  
the bridegroom is with  
them ?

<sup>35</sup> But the days will come,  
when the bridegroom shall be  
taken away from them, and  
then shall they fast  
in those days.

<sup>36</sup> And he spake also a para-  
ble unto them,

No man putteth a piece  
of a new garment upon an old :  
if otherwise, then both  
the new maketh a rent,

and the piece that was *taken*  
out of the new, agreeth not  
with the old.

<sup>37</sup> And no man putteth new

*Matt. ix. 10—17.*

wine into old bottles: else  
the bottles break, and the  
wine runneth out, and the  
bottles perish:

but they put new wine  
into new bottles, and both are  
preserved.

*Mark ii. 15—22.*

wine into old bottles; else  
the new wine doth

burst the bottles, and the  
wine is spilled, and the

bottles will be marred:  
but new wine must be put  
into new bottles.

*Matt. ix. 18—26.*

<sup>18</sup> While he spake these  
things unto them,

behold, there came  
a certain ruler,

and worshipped

him, saying,

My daughter

*Mark v. 22—43.*

<sup>22</sup> And, behold, there cometh  
one of the rulers  
of the synagogue,

Jairus by name;  
and when he saw him, he  
fell at his feet,

<sup>23</sup> And besought  
him greatly, saying,

My little daughter

*Luke v. 29—39.*

wine into old bottles; else  
the new wine will

burst the bottles, and be  
spilled, and the  
bottles shall perish.

<sup>38</sup> But new wine must be put  
into new bottles; and both are  
preserved.

<sup>39</sup> No man also having drunk  
old *wine*, straightway desireth  
new: for he saith, The old is  
better.

#### THE RAISING OF JAIRUS'S DAUGHTER

*Luke viii. 41—56.*

<sup>41</sup> And, behold, there came  
a man, named Jairus, and he  
was a ruler of the synagogue:

and he  
fell down at Jesus' feet,

and besought  
him that he would come into  
his house,

<sup>42</sup> For he had  
one only daughter,  
about twelve years of age,

*Matt.* ix. 18—26.

is even now dead \*:

but come and lay  
thy hand upon her,  
and she shall  
live.

<sup>19</sup> And Jesus arose  
and followed him,  
and *so did* his disciples.

<sup>20</sup> And, behold, a woman,  
which was diseased with an  
issue of blood twelve years,

came  
behind *him*, and touched the  
hem of his garment:

<sup>21</sup> For she said  
within herself,  
If I may but touch his  
garment, I shall be whole.

*Mark* v. 22—43.

lieth at the point of death:  
*I pray thee*, come and lay  
thy hands on her, that she  
may be healed; and she shall  
live.

<sup>24</sup> And *Jesus*  
went with him;

and much people followed  
him, and thronged him.

<sup>25</sup> And a certain woman,  
which had an  
issue of blood twelve years,

<sup>26</sup> And had suffered many  
things of many physicians,  
and had spent all that she  
had,

and was nothing bettered, but  
rather grew worse,

<sup>27</sup> When she had heard of  
*Jesus*, came in the press  
behind, and touched  
his garment.

<sup>28</sup> For she said,  
If I may touch but his  
clothes, I shall be whole.

<sup>29</sup> And straightway the  
fountain of her blood was  
dried up;  
and she felt in *her* body that  
she was healed of that plague.

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 298.



*Luke viii. 41—56.*  
and she lay a dying.

But as he went  
the people  
thronged him.

<sup>43</sup> And a woman  
having an  
issue of blood twelve years,

which had spent all her  
living upon physicians,

neither could be healed of  
any,

<sup>45</sup> Came  
behind *him*, and touched the  
border of his garment :

and immediately  
her issue of blood  
stanchèd.

*Matt. ix. 18—26.*

*Mark v. 22—43.*

<sup>30</sup> And Jesus immediately  
knowing in himself that virtue  
had gone out of him, turned  
him about in the press,  
and said,  
Who touched my clothes ?

<sup>31</sup> And his disciples  
said unto him, Thou seest the  
multitude thronging thee,  
and sayest thou,  
Who touched me ?

<sup>32</sup> And he looked round  
about to see her that had  
done this thing.

<sup>33</sup> But the woman

fearing and trembling,  
knowing what was done in  
her, came, and fell down  
before him, and told  
him

all the truth

<sup>22</sup> But Jesus turned him  
about, and when he saw her,  
he said,  
Daughter, be of good com-  
fort, thy faith hath made thee  
whole.  
And the woman was made

<sup>34</sup> And he said unto her,  
Daughter,  
thy faith hath made thee  
whole ; go in peace, and be  
whole of thy plague.

---

*Luke viii. 41—56.*

<sup>45</sup> And Jesus said,  
Who touched me ?

When all denied,  
Peter and they that were with  
him, said, Master, the  
multitude throng thee, and  
press *thee*, and sayest thou,  
Who touched me ?

<sup>46</sup> And Jesus said, Some-  
body hath touched me : for  
I perceive that virtue is gone  
out of me.

<sup>47</sup> And when the woman  
saw that she was not hid,  
she came,

trembling,  
and, falling down  
before him, she declared unto  
him before all the people for  
what cause she had touched  
him, and how she was healed  
immediately.

<sup>48</sup> And he said unto her,  
Daughter, be of good com-  
fort ; thy faith hath made  
thee whole ; go in peace

*Matt.* ix. 18—26.  
whole from that hour.

<sup>23</sup> And when Jesus came  
into the ruler's house,

and saw the minstrels, and the  
people making a  
noise,

<sup>24</sup> He said unto them,  
Give place,

for the maid is not dead,  
but sleepeth.

And they laughed him to  
scorn.

<sup>25</sup> But when the people  
were put forth,

*Mark* v. 22—43.

<sup>35</sup> While he yet spake, there  
came from the ruler of  
the synagogue's *house certain*  
which said, Thy daughter is  
dead; why troublest thou the  
Master any further?

<sup>36</sup> As soon as Jesus heard  
the word that was spoken,  
he saith

unto the ruler of the  
synagogue, Be not afraid, only  
believe.

<sup>37</sup> And he suffered no man  
to follow him, save Peter, and  
James, and John the brother  
of James.

<sup>38</sup> And he cometh  
to the house of the ruler  
of the synagogue,  
and seeth the tumult, and them  
that wept and wailed  
greatly.

<sup>39</sup> And when he was come in,  
he saith unto them,

Why make ye this ado and  
weep? the damsel is not dead,  
but sleepeth.

<sup>40</sup> And they laughed him to  
scorn.

But when he had put them  
all out,  
he taketh the father and

*Luke viii. 41—56.*

<sup>49</sup> While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's *house*, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead : trouble not the Master.

<sup>50</sup> But when Jesus heard it, he answered him,

saying,

Fear not :

believe only, and she shall be made whole.

<sup>51</sup> And when he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden.

<sup>52</sup> And all wept, and bewailed her :

but he

said,

Weep not; she is not dead, but sleepeth.

<sup>53</sup> And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead.

<sup>54</sup> And he put them all out,

*Matt.* ix. 18—26.

he went in,  
and took her  
by the hand,

and the  
maid arose.

<sup>26</sup>And the fame hereof went  
abroad into all that land.

*Mark* v. 22—43.

the mother of the damsel, and  
them that were with him,  
and entereth in where the  
damsel was lying.

<sup>41</sup>And he took the damsel  
by the hand, and said unto  
her, *Talitha cumi*; which is,  
being interpreted, Damsel, I  
say unto thee, arise.

<sup>42</sup>And straightway the  
damsel arose,  
and walked: for  
she was *of the age* of twelve  
years.

And they were  
astonished  
with a great astonishment.

<sup>43</sup>And he charged them  
straitly that no man should  
know it; and commanded  
that something should be  
given her to eat.

---

*Luke* viii. 41—56.

and took her  
by the hand, and called,  
saying,

Maid,  
arise.

<sup>55</sup> And her spirit came  
again,

and she arose  
straightway :

and he commanded  
to give her meat.

<sup>56</sup> And her parents were  
astonished :

but he charged them  
that they should tell no man  
what was done.



## SECTION XXI

## TWO BLIND MEN HEALED, AND A DUMB SPIRIT CAST OUT

*Matt. ix. 27—34.*

<sup>27</sup> And when Jesus departed thence, two blind men \* followed him, crying, and saying, *Thou Son of David*, have mercy on us. <sup>28</sup> And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? They said unto him, Yea, Lord. <sup>29</sup> Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it unto you. <sup>30</sup> And their eyes were opened; and Jesus straitly charged them, saying, See

*that no man know it.* <sup>31</sup> But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that country.

<sup>32</sup> And as they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumb man possessed with a devil. <sup>33</sup> And when the devil was cast out, the dumb spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel. <sup>34</sup> But the Pharisees said, He casteth out devils through the prince of the devils.

## SECTION XXII

## THE RETURN TO NAZARETH

*Matt. xiii. 54—58.*

<sup>54</sup> And when he was come into his own country,

*Mark vi. 1—6.*

<sup>1</sup> And he went out from thence, and came into his own country; and his disciples follow him.

<sup>2</sup> And when the sabbath-day

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 308.

*Matt.* xiii. 54—58.

he taught them  
in their synagogue,  
insomuch that they were  
astonished, and said,

Whence hath this *man*  
this wisdom,

and *these* mighty  
works ?

<sup>55</sup> Is not this the carpenter's  
son ?

is not his mother  
called Mary ?

and his brethren, James, and  
Josés, and Simon, and Judas ?

<sup>56</sup> And his sisters, are they  
not all with us ?

Whence then hath this *man*  
all these things ?

<sup>57</sup> And they were offended  
in him.

But Jesus said unto them,  
A prophet is not without  
honour, save in his own coun-  
try,

and in his own house.

<sup>58</sup> And he did  
not many mighty works there,

because of their unbelief.

*Mark* vi. 1—6.

was come, he began to teach  
in the synagogue;  
and many hearing *him* were  
astonished, saying,  
From whence hath this *man*  
these things ? and what wis-  
dom *is* this which is given unto  
him, that even such mighty  
works are wrought by his  
hands ?

<sup>3</sup> Is not this the carpenter,

the son of Mary,

the brother of James, and  
Josés, and of Juda, and Simon ?

and are not his sisters here  
with us ?

And they were  
offended at him.

<sup>4</sup> But Jesus said unto them,  
A prophet is not without  
honour, but in his own coun-  
try,

and among his own kin,  
and in his own house.

<sup>5</sup> And he could there do no  
mighty work,  
save that he laid his hand  
upon a few sick folk, and  
healed *them*.

<sup>6</sup> And he marvelled because  
of their unbelief.

## PART VI

### The Twelve sent Forth

#### SECTION I

*Matt. ix. 35—x. 15.*

AND Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness, and every disease among the people.

<sup>36</sup> But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd. <sup>37</sup> Then saith he unto his disciples, The harvest truly *is* plenteous, but the labourers *are* few; <sup>38</sup> pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

<sup>1</sup> And when he had called unto *him* his twelve disciples, he gave them power *against*

*Mark vi. 6—11.*

<sup>6</sup> And he went round about the villages, teaching\*.

<sup>7</sup> And he called unto *him* the twelve, and began to send

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 315, 316.

APOSTLES INSTRUCTED FOR THEIR MISSION

*Luke ix. 1—5.*

<sup>1</sup> Then he called  
his twelve disciples together,  
and gave them power and

*Matt.* ix. 35—x. 15.

unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease.

<sup>5</sup> These twelve Jesus sent forth,

and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into *any* city of the Samaritans enter ye not :

<sup>6</sup> but go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

<sup>7</sup> And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. <sup>8</sup> Heal the sick,

cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils : freely ye have received, freely give.

<sup>9</sup> Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses,

<sup>10</sup> nor scrip for *your* journey, neither two coats,

neither shoes,

nor yet staves :

for the workman is worthy of his meat.

<sup>11</sup> And into whatsoever city or town ye shall enter, enquire who in it is worthy ;

and there abide till ye go thence.

<sup>12</sup> And when ye come into an house, salute it. <sup>13</sup> And if the house be worthy, let your peace

*Mark* vi. 6—11.

them forth

by two and two ;

and gave them power over unclean spirits ;

<sup>8</sup> And commanded them that they should take nothing for *their* journey,

save a staff only ;

no scrip, no bread,

no money in *their* purse :

<sup>9</sup> But *be* shod with sandals ; and not put on two coats.

<sup>10</sup> And he said unto them, In what place soever ye enter into an house,

there abide till ye depart from that place.

*Luke ix. 1—5.*

authority over all devils,  
and to cure

diseases.

<sup>2</sup> And he sent  
them,

to preach  
the kingdom of God,  
and to heal the sick.

<sup>3</sup> And he said unto them,  
Take nothing  
for *your* journey,  
neither staves,  
nor scrip, neither bread,  
neither money ;

neither have two coats apiece.

<sup>4</sup> And whatsoever house ye  
enter into,

there abide, and thence de-  
part.

*Matt. ix. 35—x. 15.*

come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you.

<sup>14</sup> And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, when ye depart out of that house or city, shake off the dust of your feet.

<sup>15</sup> Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of judgment, than for that city.

*Mark vi. 6—11.*

<sup>11</sup> And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence,

shake off  
the dust under your feet  
for a testimony against them.

Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of judgment, than for that city.

## SECTION II

*Matt. x. 16—42; xi. 1.*

<sup>16</sup> Behold I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. <sup>17</sup> But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in the synagogues; <sup>18</sup> and ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles. <sup>19</sup> But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given

you in that same hour what ye shall speak. <sup>20</sup> For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.

<sup>21</sup> And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child: and the children shall rise up against *their* parents, and cause them to be put to death.

<sup>22</sup> And ye shall be hated of all *men* for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved.

<sup>23</sup> But when they persecute

*Luke ix. 1—5.*

<sup>5</sup> And whosoever will not receive you,  
when ye go out of that city,  
shake off  
the very dust from your feet  
for a testimony against them.

## FURTHER INSTRUCTION OF APOSTLES

*Matt. x. 16—42; xi. 1.*

you in this city, flee ye into another, for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come.

<sup>24</sup> The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord. <sup>25</sup> It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household?

<sup>26</sup> Fear them not therefore:

for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known. <sup>27</sup> What I tell you in darkness, *that* speak ye in light: and what ye hear in the ear, *that* preach ye upon the house-tops. <sup>28</sup> And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell. <sup>29</sup> Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground



*Matt. x. 16—42; xi. 1.*

without your Father. <sup>30</sup> But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. <sup>31</sup> Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows.

<sup>32</sup> Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven.

<sup>33</sup> But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

<sup>34</sup> Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword. <sup>35</sup> For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. <sup>36</sup> And a man's foes *shall be* they of his own household. <sup>37</sup> He that loveth father or mother more than me, is not worthy of me: and

he that loveth son or daughter more than me, is not worthy of me. <sup>38</sup> And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. <sup>39</sup> He that findeth his life, shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake, shall find it.

<sup>40</sup> He that receiveth you, receiveth me; and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me. <sup>41</sup> He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet, shall receive a prophet's reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man, shall receive a righteous man's reward. <sup>42</sup> And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold *water* only, in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.

*Matt. xi. 1.*

<sup>1</sup> And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

*Mark vi. 12, 13.*

<sup>12</sup> And they went out, and

*Luke ix. 6.*

<sup>6</sup> And they departed, and

*Mark* vi. 12, 13.

preached

that men should repent.

<sup>13</sup> And they cast out many devils, and anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed *them*.

### SECTION III

*Matt.* xiv. 1, 2. 6—12.

<sup>1</sup> At that time Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus,

*Mark* vi. 14—16. 21—29.

<sup>14</sup> And king Herod heard

*of him;*

for his name was spread abroad:

<sup>2</sup> And said unto his servants, This is John the Baptist; he is risen from the dead: and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him.

and he said,

That

John the Baptist was risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him.

<sup>15</sup> Others said, That it is Elias.

And others said, That it is a prophet, or as one of the prophets.

<sup>16</sup> But when Herod heard *thereof*,

*Luke ix. 6.*

went through the towns,  
preaching the gospel,

and healing every where.

HEROD HEARS OF CHRIST

*Luke ix. 7—9.*

<sup>7</sup> Now Herod the  
tetrarch heard of all that was  
done by him :

and he was perplexed, because  
that it was said of some, that  
John was risen from the dead ;

<sup>8</sup> And of some,  
that Elias had appeared ;  
and of others, that one of the  
old prophets was risen again.

*Matt.* xiv. 1, 2. 6—12.

*Mark* vi. 14—16. 21—29.

he said, It is John,  
whom I beheaded:

he is risen from the dead.

Herod's  
birthday was kept,  
the daughter  
of Herodias  
danced before them  
and pleased Herod.

<sup>7</sup> Whereupon he promised  
withan oath, to give her what-  
soever she would ask.

<sup>8</sup> And she,  
being before instructed of her  
mother, said,

Give  
me here John Baptist's head

<sup>21</sup> And when a convenient  
day was come\*, that Herod on  
his birthday made a supper to  
his lords, high captains, and  
chief *estates* of Galilee;

<sup>22</sup> And when the daughter  
of the said Herodias came in,  
and danced,

and pleased Herod  
and them that sat with him,  
the king said unto the damsel,  
Ask of me whatsoever thou  
wilt, and I will give *it* thee.

<sup>23</sup> And he sware unto her,  
Whatsoever thou shalt ask of  
me, I will give *it* thee, unto  
the half of my kingdom.

<sup>24</sup> And she went forth and  
said unto her mother, What  
shall I ask? and she said,  
The head of John the Baptist.

<sup>25</sup> And she

came in straightway with  
haste unto the king, and asked,  
saying, I will that thou give  
me by and by in a charger the

\* Continued from Pt. iii. § iv.; see Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 336.

---

*Luke ix. 7—9.*

<sup>9</sup>And Herod said, John  
have I beheaded: but who is  
this, of whom I hear such  
things?

and he desired to see him.

*Matt.* xiv. 1, 2. 6—12.  
in a charger.

<sup>9</sup>And the king was  
sorry;  
nevertheless for the oath's  
sake, and them  
which sat with him at meat, he  
commanded *it* to be given *her*.

<sup>10</sup>And he  
sent,

and

*Mark* vi. 14—16. 21—29.  
head of John the Baptist.

<sup>26</sup>And the king was exceeding sorry;

*yet* for his oath's  
sake, and for their sakes  
which sat with him, he  
would not reject her.

<sup>27</sup>And immediately the king  
sent an executioner, and com-  
manded his head to be  
brought: and he went and

## SECTION IV

*Matt.* xiv. 13, 14.

*Mark* vi. 30—34.

<sup>30</sup>And the apostles

gathered themselves together  
unto Jesus, and told him all  
things, both what they had  
done, and what they had  
taught. <sup>31</sup>And he said unto  
them, Come ye yourselves  
apart into a desert place, and  
rest awhile: for there were  
many coming and going, and  
they had no leisure so much  
as to eat.

<sup>13</sup>When Jesus heard *of it*,  
he departed \*

<sup>32</sup>And they departed

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 340, 341.

*Matt.* xiv. 1, 2. 6—12.

beheaded John in the prison.

<sup>11</sup>And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel: and she brought *it* to her mother.

<sup>12</sup>And his disciples came, and took up the body, and buried it, and went and told Jesus.

*Mark* vi. 14—16. 21—29.

beheaded him in the prison,

<sup>23</sup>And brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel: and the damsel gave it to her mother.

<sup>29</sup>And when his disciples heard *of it*, they came and took up his corpse, and laid it in a tomb.

#### CHRIST RETIRES WITH THE TWELVE

*Luke* ix. 10, 11.

<sup>10</sup>And the apostles, when they were returned,

told him all  
that they had

done.

*John* vi. 1—5.

<sup>1</sup>After these things

And he  
took them, and went aside Jesus went



*Matt.* xiv. 13, 14.

thence by ship into a  
desert place apart:

and when the people  
had heard *thereof*,

they followed him on foot out  
of the cities.

*Mark* vi. 30—34.

into a  
desert place by ship privately.

<sup>33</sup> And the people saw  
them departing,

and many knew him,  
and ran afoot thither out  
of all cities, and outwent them,  
and came together unto him.

<sup>14</sup> And Jesus  
went forth,

and saw a great multitude,

and was moved with com-  
passion toward them,

and he healed  
their sick.

<sup>34</sup> And Jesus  
when he came out,

saw much people,

and was moved with compas-  
sion toward them,  
because they were as sheep  
not having a shepherd:

and he began to teach them  
many things.

*Luke ix. 10, 11.*

*John vi. 1—5.*

privately

into a desert place,  
belonging to the city called  
Bethsaida.

<sup>11</sup>And the people,  
when they knew *it*,

followed him :

over the sea of Galilee,  
which is *the sea* of Tiberias.

<sup>2</sup>And a great multitude

followed him,

because they saw his miracles  
which he did on them that  
were diseased.

<sup>3</sup>And Jesus went up into a  
mountain, and there he sat  
with his disciples.

<sup>4</sup>And the passover, a feast  
of the Jews, was nigh.

<sup>5</sup>When Jesus

then lifted up *his* eyes,  
and saw a great company  
come unto him.

and he received them,

and spake unto them of the  
kingdom of God, and healed  
them that had need of healing.

## SECTION V

*Matt. xiv. 15—21.*

<sup>15</sup>And when it was  
evening,  
his disciples came to him,  
saying,

This is a desert place, and the  
time is now past;  
send the multitude away, that  
they may go into  
the villages,

and buy themselves victuals.

<sup>16</sup>But Jesus  
said unto them,  
They need not depart;  
give ye them to eat.

*Mark vi. 35—44.*

<sup>35</sup>And when the day was  
now far spent,  
his disciples came unto him,  
and said,

This is a desert place, and now  
the time is far passed:

<sup>36</sup>Send them away, that  
they may go into  
the country round about, and  
into the villages,

and buy themselves bread:  
for they have nothing to eat.

<sup>37</sup>He answered and  
said unto them,

Give ye them to eat.  
And they say unto him, Shall  
we go and buy

two hundred pennyworth of  
bread, and give them to eat?

<sup>38</sup>He saith unto them, How  
many loaves have ye? go and  
see\*.

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 347, 348.

---

THE FIRST MIRACLE OF THE LOAVES*Luke ix. 12—17.**John vi. 5—14.*

<sup>12</sup> And when the day began  
to wear away, then came the  
twelve,  
and said  
unto him,

Send the multitude away, that  
they may go into the towns  
and country round about,

and lodge,  
and get victuals: for  
we are here in a desert place.

<sup>13</sup> But he  
said unto them,

Give ye them to eat.  
And they said,

<sup>5</sup> he saith unto Philip,  
Whence shall we buy bread,  
that these may eat?

<sup>6</sup> And this he said to prove  
him: for he himself knew what  
he would do.

<sup>7</sup> Philip answered him, Two  
hundred pennyworth of bread

*Matt.* xiv. 15—21.*Mark* vi. 35—44.

<sup>17</sup> And they say unto him,  
We have here but five  
loaves, and two fishes.

<sup>18</sup> He said, Bring them hither  
to me.

<sup>19</sup> And he commanded  
the multitude to sit down

on the grass,

and took the five loaves, and  
the two fishes, and looking up  
to heaven, he blessed,

and brake,  
and gave the loaves to *his*  
disciples,

and the disciples to the mul-  
titude.

<sup>20</sup> And they did all eat, and

And when they knew, they say,  
Five,  
and two fishes.

<sup>39</sup> And he commanded them  
to make all sit down

by companies  
upon the green grass.

<sup>40</sup> And they sat down in  
ranks, by hundreds, and by  
fifties.

<sup>41</sup> And when he had  
taken the five loaves and  
the two fishes, he looked up  
to heaven, and blessed,

and brake the loaves,  
and gave *them* to his  
disciples  
to set before them ;

and the two fishes divided  
he among them all.

<sup>42</sup> And they did all eat, and

*Luke ix. 12-17.*

We have no more but five loaves and two fishes; except we should go and buy meat for all this people. For they were about five thousand men.

<sup>14</sup> And he said to his disciples, Make them sit down by fifties in a company.

<sup>15</sup> And they did so, and made them all sit down.

<sup>16</sup> Then he took the five loaves and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed them,

and brake,

and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude.

<sup>17</sup> And they did eat, and

*John vi. 5-14.*

is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little.

<sup>8</sup> One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him,

<sup>9</sup> There is a lad

here, which hath five barley loaves, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many?

<sup>10</sup> And Jesus said, make the men sit down.

Now there was much grass in the place.

<sup>10</sup> So the men sat down, in number about five thousand.

<sup>11</sup> And Jesus took the loaves,

and when he had given thanks,

he distributed to the disciples,

and the disciples to them that were set down; and likewise of the fishes as much as they would.

<sup>12</sup> When they

*Matt.* xiv. 15—21.

were filled:

And they took up of the fragments that remained twelve baskets full.

<sup>21</sup> And they that had eaten

were about five thousand men,  
beside women and children.

*Mark* vi. 35—44.

were filled.

<sup>43</sup> And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments,

and of the fishes.

<sup>44</sup> And they that did eat  
of the loaves  
were about five thousand men.

## SECTION VI

*Matt.* xiv. 22, 23.

<sup>22</sup> And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, and to go before him unto the other side, while he sent the multitudes away.

*Mark* vi. 45, 46.

<sup>45</sup> And straightway he constrained his disciples to get into the ship, and to go to the other side before unto Bethsaida, while he sent away the people.

*Luke ix. 12—17.*

were all filled :

and there was taken up of  
fragments that remained to  
them twelve baskets.

*John vi. 5—14.*

were filled,

he said unto his disciples,  
Gather up the fragments that  
remain, that nothing be lost.

<sup>13</sup>Therefore they gathered  
*them* together and filled  
twelve baskets  
with the fragments of the five  
barley loaves, which remained  
over and above unto them  
that had eaten.

<sup>14</sup>Then those men, when  
they had seen the miracle  
that Jesus did, said, This is of  
a truth that prophet that  
should come into the world.

CHRIST AGAIN RETIRES TO THE MOUNTAIN



*Matt.* xiv. 22, 23.

<sup>23</sup> And when he had sent  
the multitude away,

he went up into a moun-  
tain  
apart to pray:  
and when the evening was  
come\*, he was there alone.

*Mark* vi. 45, 46.

<sup>46</sup> And when he had sent  
them away,

he departed into a moun-  
tain  
to pray.

## SECTION VII

*Matt.* xiv. 24—33.

<sup>24</sup> But the ship was now in  
in rowing;

*Mark* vi. 47—52.

<sup>47</sup> And when even was  
come,

the ship was in the midst of  
the sea, and he alone on the  
land.

<sup>48</sup> And he saw them toiling

<sup>24</sup> But the ship was now in in rowing;

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 368, 369.

*John vi. 15.*

<sup>15</sup>When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come and take him by force, to make him a king, he departed again into a mountain himself alone.

*CHRIST WALKS UPON THE SEA*

*John vi. 16—21.*

<sup>16</sup>And when even was *now* come, his disciples went down unto the sea,

<sup>17</sup>And entered into a ship, and went over the sea toward Capernaum\*. And it was now dark, and Jesus was not come to them.

<sup>18</sup>And the sea arose by reason of a great wind that blew.

\* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 370, 371.

*Matt. xiv. 24—33.*

the midst of the sea, tossed with waves : for the wind was contrary.

<sup>25</sup> And in the fourth watch of the night Jesus went unto them, walking on the sea.

<sup>26</sup> And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea,

they were troubled, saying,

It is a spirit; and they cried out for fear.

<sup>27</sup> But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying,

Be of good cheer; it is I; be not afraid.

<sup>28</sup> And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water.

<sup>29</sup> And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Jesus.

<sup>30</sup> But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink,

*Mark vi. 47—52.*

for the wind was contrary unto them :

and about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them, walking upon the sea, and would have passed by them.

<sup>49</sup> But when they saw him walking upon the sea,

they supposed it had been a spirit, and cried out :

<sup>50</sup> For they all saw him, and were troubled.

And immediately he talked with them, and saith unto them,

Be of good cheer : it is I; be not afraid.

---

· *John vi. 16—21.*

<sup>19</sup> So when they had rowed  
about five and twenty or thirty  
furlongs,

they  
see Jesus walking on the sea,  
and drawing nigh unto the  
ship:

and they were afraid.

<sup>20</sup> But he  
saith  
unto them,  
not afraid.  
It is I; be

*Matt.* xiv. 24—33.

he cried, saying, Lord, save me.

<sup>31</sup> And immediately Jesus stretched forth *his* hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

<sup>32</sup> And when they were come

into the ship;  
the wind ceased.

<sup>33</sup> Then they that were in the ship came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.

*Mark* vi. 47—52.

<sup>51</sup> And he went up unto them

into the ship;  
and the wind ceased:

and they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondered.

<sup>52</sup> For they considered not *the miracle* of the loaves: for their heart was hardened.

## SECTION VIII

*Matt.* xiv. 34—36.

<sup>34</sup> And when they were gone over, they came into the land of Gennesaret.

<sup>35</sup> And when

*Mark* vi. 53—56.

<sup>53</sup> And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Gennesaret, and drew to the shore.

<sup>54</sup> And when

*John vi. 16—21.*

<sup>21</sup> Then they willingly  
received him into the ship:

and immediately the ship was  
at the land whither they went.

PEOPLE HEALED AT GENNESARET

*Matt. xiv. 34—36.*

*Mark vi. 53—56.*

the men of that place had  
knowledge of him,  
they sent out into

they were come out of the  
ship, straightway they

knew him,

<sup>55</sup> And ran through

*Matt. xiv. 34—36.*

all that country round about,  
and brought unto him all that  
were diseased;

<sup>36</sup> And besought him that  
they might only touch

the hem of his garment :  
and as many as touched  
were made perfectly whole.

*Mark vi. 53—56.*

that whole region round about,  
and began to carry about in  
beds those that were sick,  
where they heard he was.

<sup>56</sup> And whithersoever he en-  
tered, into villages, or cities,  
or country, they laid the sick  
in the streets,

and besought him that  
they might touch

if it were but  
the border of his garment :  
and as many as touched him  
were made whole.

## SECTION IX

### CHRIST FOUND AT CAPERNAUM

*John vi. 22—26.*

<sup>22</sup> The day following, when  
the people which stood on the  
other side of the sea, saw  
that there was none other boat  
there, save that one whereinto  
his disciples were entered, and  
that Jesus went not with his  
disciples into the boat, but *that*  
his disciples were gone away  
alone; <sup>23</sup> (howbeit there came  
other boats from Tiberias, nigh  
unto the place where they did  
eat bread, after that the Lord  
had given thanks :) <sup>24</sup> when  
the people therefore saw that

Jesus was not there, neither  
his disciples, they also took  
shipping, and came to Ca-  
pernaum, seeking for Jesus.

<sup>25</sup> And when they had found  
him on the other side of the  
sea, they said unto him, Rab-  
bi, when camest thou hither?

<sup>26</sup> Jesus answered them and  
said, Verily, verily, I say unto  
you, Ye seek me, not because  
ye saw the miracles, but be-  
cause ye did eat of the loaves,  
and were filled.

## SECTION X

## THE INCARNATION

*John vi. 27—40.*

<sup>27</sup> Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed.

<sup>28</sup> Then said they unto him, What shall we do that we might work the works of God? <sup>29</sup> Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.

<sup>30</sup> They said therefore unto him, What sign shewest thou then, that we may see, and believe thee? what dost thou work? <sup>31</sup> Our fathers did eat manna in the desert; as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat. <sup>32</sup> Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven. <sup>33</sup> For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the

world. <sup>34</sup> Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread. <sup>35</sup> And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life; he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst.

<sup>36</sup> But I said unto you, That ye also have seen me, and believe not. <sup>37</sup> All that the Father giveth me shall come to me: and him that cometh to me, I will in no wise cast out. <sup>38</sup> For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. <sup>39</sup> And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, That of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day. <sup>40</sup> And this is the will of him that sent me, That every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.



## SECTION XI

## MURMURING OF THE JEWS

*John vi. 41—46.*

<sup>41</sup> The Jews then murmured at him, because he said, I am the bread which came down from heaven. <sup>42</sup> And they said, Is not this Jesus the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how is it then that he saith, I came down from heaven? <sup>43</sup> Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves. <sup>44</sup> No man can come to me, except

the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. <sup>45</sup> It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me. <sup>46</sup> Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the father.

## SECTION XII

## THE HOLY EUCHARIST

*John vi. 47—59.*

<sup>47</sup> Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life. <sup>48</sup> I am that bread of life. <sup>49</sup> Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead. <sup>50</sup> This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die. <sup>51</sup> I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread he shall live for ever; and the bread that I

will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world. <sup>52</sup> The Jews therefore strove among themselves, saying, How can this man give us *his* flesh to eat? <sup>53</sup> Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. <sup>54</sup> Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise

*John vi. 47—59.*

him up at the last day.

<sup>55</sup> For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed.

<sup>56</sup> He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.

<sup>57</sup> As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father, so he that eateth me,

even he shall live by me.

<sup>58</sup> This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread shall live for ever. <sup>59</sup> These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

## SECTION XIII

### DISCIPLES OFFENDED

*John vi. 60—71.*

<sup>60</sup> Many therefore of his disciples, when they had heard *this*, said, This is an hard saying, who can hear it? <sup>61</sup> When

Jesus knew in himself that his disciples murmured at it, he said unto them, Doth this offend you? <sup>62</sup> *What* and if ye shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before?

<sup>63</sup> It is the Spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, *they* are spirit, and *they* are life. <sup>64</sup> But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who should betray him. <sup>65</sup> And he said, Therefore said I unto you,

that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father.

<sup>66</sup> From that *time* many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.

<sup>67</sup> Then said Jesus unto the twelve, Will ye also go away?

<sup>68</sup> Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life. <sup>69</sup> And we believe, and are sure, that thou art Christ, the Son of the living God. <sup>70</sup> Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil? <sup>71</sup> He spake of Judas Iscariot, *the son* of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.

## PART VII

### Teaching in Galilee

THE THIRD YEAR OF OUR LORD'S MINISTRY

#### SECTION I

*Matt. xv. 1.*

*Mark vii. 1.*

**T**HEN came to  
Jesus scribes and Phari-  
sees, which were  
of Jerusalem.

<sup>1</sup> Then came together unto  
him the Pharisees, and certain  
of the scribes, which came  
from Jerusalem.

#### SECTION II

*Mark vii. 2—13.*

<sup>2</sup> And when they saw some  
of his disciples eat bread with  
defiled, that is to say, with un-  
washen, hands, they found  
fault. <sup>3</sup> For the Pharisees,  
and all the Jews, except they

THE THIRD PASSOVER \*

*John* vii. 1.

<sup>1</sup> After these things Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jewry, because the Jews sought to kill him.

EATING WITH UNWASHEN HANDS

*Mark* vii. 2—13.

wash *their* hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders.

<sup>4</sup> And *when they come* from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 1—4, and Study of Gospels, pp. 344—346.

*Matt. xv. 2—9.*

saying,  
<sup>2</sup> Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread.

<sup>3</sup> But he answered and said unto them,—

<sup>7</sup> Ye hypocrites \*, well did Esaias prophesy of you,

saying,  
<sup>8</sup> This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and

honoureth me with *their* lips; but their heart is far from me.

<sup>9</sup> But in vain they do worship me, teaching *for* doctrines the commandments of men.

<sup>8</sup> Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God, by

*Mark vii. 2—13.*

things there be, which they have received to hold, *as* the washing of cups, and pots, brassen vessels, and of tables.

<sup>5</sup> Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands?

<sup>6</sup> He answered and said unto them,

Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written,

This people

honoureth me with *their* lips, but their heart is far from me.

<sup>7</sup> Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching *for* doctrines the commandments of men.

<sup>8</sup> For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, *as* the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.

<sup>9</sup> And he said unto them,  
 Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 6. 8.

*Matt. xv. 2—9.*

your tradition ?

<sup>4</sup> For God commanded,  
saying,

Honour thy father and  
mother; and he that curseth  
father or mother, let him die  
the death.

<sup>5</sup> But ye say, Whosoever  
shall say to *his* father or *his*  
mother, *It is*

a gift, by whatsoever  
thou mightest be profited by  
me;

<sup>6</sup> And honour not his father  
or his mother,  
*he shall be free.*

Thus have ye made the com-  
mandment of God of none  
effect by your tradition.

*Mark vii. 2—13.*

ye may keep your own tradi-  
tion.

<sup>10</sup> For Moses said,  
Honour thy father and thy  
mother; and, Whoso curseth  
father or mother, let him die  
the death.

<sup>11</sup> But ye say, If a man  
shall say to his father or  
mother, *It is* Corban, that is to  
say, a gift, by whatsoever  
thou mightest be profited by  
me;

*he shall be free.*

<sup>12</sup> And ye suffer him no more  
to do ought for his father or  
his mother;

<sup>13</sup> Making the word  
of God of none  
effect through your tradition,  
which ye have delivered: and  
many such like things do ye.

### SECTION III

#### WHAT DEFILETH THE MAN

*Matt. xv. 10—20.*

<sup>10</sup> And he called  
the multitude\*, and

*Mark vii. 14—23.*

<sup>14</sup> And when he had called  
all the people *unto him*, he

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 10—12.



*Matt. xv. 10—20.*

said unto them, Hear,

and understand :

<sup>11</sup> Not that which  
goeth into  
the mouth defileth a man; but  
that which cometh out of  
the mouth, this defileth  
a man.

<sup>12</sup> Then came his disciples,  
and said unto him, Knowest  
thou that the Pharisees were  
offended, after they heard this  
saying? <sup>13</sup> But he answered  
and said, Every plant, which  
my heavenly Father hath not  
planted, shall be rooted up.  
<sup>14</sup> Let them alone: they be  
blind leaders of the blind. And  
if the blind lead the blind, both  
shall fall into the ditch.

<sup>15</sup> Then answered Peter, and  
said unto him,

Declare unto us this parable.

<sup>16</sup> And Jesus said,  
Are ye also yet without  
understanding ?

<sup>17</sup> Do not ye yet understand,  
that whatsoever  
entereth in at the mouth

*Mark vii. 14—23.*

said unto them, Hearken unto  
me every one of you,  
and understand :

<sup>15</sup> There is nothing from with-  
out a man, that entering into  
him can defile him: but  
the things which come out of  
him, those are they that defile  
the man.

<sup>16</sup> If any man have ears to  
hear, let him hear.

<sup>17</sup> And when he was entered  
into the house from the people,

his disciples asked him  
concerning the parable.

<sup>18</sup> And he saith unto them,  
Are ye so without  
understanding also ?

Do ye not perceive,  
that whatsoever thing from  
without entereth into the man,  
*it* cannot defile him;

<sup>19</sup> Because it entereth not

*Matt. xv. 10—20.*

goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?

<sup>18</sup> But those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart; and they defile the man.

<sup>19</sup> For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications,

thefts, false witness, blasphemies:

<sup>20</sup> These are *the things* which defile a man: but to eat with unwashen hands defileth not a man

*Mark vii. 14—23.*

into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats?

<sup>20</sup> And he said, That which cometh out of the man,

that defileth the man.

<sup>21</sup> For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,

<sup>22</sup> Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness:

<sup>23</sup> All these evil things come from within, and defile the man.

## SECTION IV

### THE WOMAN OF CANAAN

*Matt. xv. 21—28.*

<sup>21</sup> Then Jesus went thence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon. <sup>22</sup> And, behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coasts, and cried unto him, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, *thou* Son of David; my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil

*Mark vii. 24—30.*

<sup>24</sup> And from thence he arose, and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon;



*Matt.* xv. 21—28.

<sup>23</sup> But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away; for she crieth after us. <sup>24</sup> But he answered and said, I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

<sup>25</sup> Then came she and worshipped him saying, Lord, help me

<sup>26</sup> But he answered and said,

It is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast *it* to dogs.

<sup>27</sup> And she said,

Truth, Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their master's table.

<sup>28</sup> Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great *is* thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt.

*Mark* vii. 24—30.

and entered into an house, and would have no man know *it*: but he could not be hid. <sup>25</sup> For a *certain* woman, whose young daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feet:

<sup>26</sup> The woman was a Greek, a Syrophenician by nation: and she besought him that he would cast forth the devil out of her daughter.

<sup>27</sup> But Jesus said unto her, Let the children first be filled: for it is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast *it* unto the dogs.

<sup>28</sup> And she answered and said unto him, Yes, Lord: yet the dogs under the table eat of the children's crumbs.

<sup>29</sup> And he said unto her,

For this saying go thy way;

*Matt.* xv. 21—28.

And her daughter was made whole from that very hour.

*Mark* vii. 24—30.

the devil is gone out of thy daughter.

<sup>30</sup> And when she was come to her house, she found the devil gone out, and her daughter laid upon the bed.

## SECTION V

### A DEAF AND STAMMERING MAN HEALED

*Matt.* xv. 29.

<sup>29</sup> And Jesus departed from thence, and came nigh unto the sea of Galilee.

*Mark* vii. 31.

<sup>31</sup> And again, departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the coast of Decapolis\*.

*Mark* vii. 32—37.

<sup>32</sup> And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech; and they beseech him to put his hand upon him. <sup>33</sup> And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue; <sup>34</sup> and looking up to heaven, he sighed, and saith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened. <sup>35</sup> And straightway his ears

were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain. <sup>36</sup> And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published it; <sup>37</sup> and were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well: he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 30, 31.

## SECTION VI

## THE SECOND MIRACLE OF THE LOAVES

*Matt. xv. 29—31.*

<sup>29</sup> And *he* went up into a mountain, and sat down there.

<sup>30</sup> And great multitudes came unto him, having with them *those that were* lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus' feet; and he healed

them: <sup>31</sup>insomuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blind to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.

*Matt. xv. 32—38.*

<sup>32</sup> Then Jesus called his disciples *unto him*, and said,

I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three days, and have nothing to eat:

and I will not send them away fasting,

lest they faint in the way.

<sup>33</sup> And his disciples say unto him, Whence should we

have so much bread in the wilderness,

*Mark viii. 1—9.*

<sup>1</sup>In those days the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eat,

Jesus called his disciples *unto him*, and saith unto them,

<sup>2</sup>I have compassion on the multitude, because they have now been with me three days, and have nothing to eat:

<sup>3</sup>And if I send them away fasting to their own houses, they will faint by the way: for divers of them came from far.

<sup>4</sup>And his disciples answered him, From whence can a man satisfy these *men* with

bread here in the wilderness?

*Matt. xv. 32—38.*

as to fill so great a multitude?

<sup>34</sup> And Jesus saith unto them,  
How many loaves have ye?  
And they said, Seven, and a  
few little fishes.

<sup>35</sup> And he commanded the  
multitude to sit down on the  
ground.

<sup>36</sup> And he took the seven  
loaves,

and the fishes,  
and gave thanks, and brake  
*them*, and gave to his disciples,

and the disciples to the mul-  
titude

<sup>37</sup> And they did all eat, and  
were filled: and they took up  
of the broken *meat* that was  
left, seven baskets full.

<sup>38</sup> And they that did eat  
were four thousand men,  
beside women and children.

*Mark viii. 1—9.*

<sup>5</sup> And he asked *them*,  
How many loaves have ye?  
And they said, Seven.

<sup>6</sup> And he commanded the  
people to sit down on the  
ground:

and he took the seven  
loaves,

and gave thanks, and brake,  
and gave to his disciples

to set before *them*:  
and they did set *them* before  
the people.

<sup>7</sup> And they had a few small  
fishes: and he blessed, and  
commanded to set them also  
before *them*.

<sup>8</sup> So they did eat, and were  
filled: and they took up of  
the broken *meat* that was left,  
seven baskets.

<sup>9</sup> And they that had eaten  
were about four thousand.

## SECTION VII

### THE PHARISEES AGAIN SEEK A SIGN

*Matt. xv. 39; xvi. 1—4.*

<sup>39</sup> And he sent  
away the multitude,

*Mark viii. 9—13.*

And he sent  
them away.

<sup>10</sup> And straightway

*Matt.* xv. 39; xvi. 1—4.

and took ship,

and came into the coast of  
Magdala\*.

*Matt.* xvi. 1—4.

<sup>1</sup>The Pharisees also with  
the Sadducees came\*,

and tempting, desired him  
that he would shew them a  
sign from heaven.

<sup>2</sup>He answered and said  
unto them, When it is even-  
ing, ye say, *It will be fair*  
weather: for the sky is red.

<sup>3</sup>And in the morning, *It*  
*will be* foul weather to day:  
for the sky is red and lowring.  
O ye hypocrites, ye can dis-  
cern the face of the sky; but  
can ye not *discern* the signs  
of the times? <sup>4</sup>A wicked  
and adulterous generation  
seeketh after a sign; and  
there shall no sign be given  
unto it, but the sign of the  
prophet Jonas. And he left  
them, and departed.

*Mark* viii. 9—13.

he entered into a ship

with his disciples,

and came into the parts of  
Dalmanutha.

<sup>11</sup> And the Pharisees came  
forth, and began to question  
with him, seeking of him a  
sign from heaven, tempting  
him.

<sup>12</sup> And he sighed deeply in  
his spirit, and saith, Why  
doth this generation seek after  
a sign? verily I say unto  
you, there shall no sign be  
given unto this generation.

<sup>13</sup> And he left them, and  
entering into the ship again,  
departed to the other side.

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 45, 46.

## SECTION VIII

## THE LEAVEN OF SCRIPTURE INTERPRETED

*Matt. xvi. 5—12.*

<sup>5</sup> And when his disciples  
were come to the other side,

they had forgotten to take  
bread\*.

<sup>6</sup> Then Jesus said unto  
them, Take heed, and beware  
of the leaven of the Phari-  
sees and of the Sadducees.

<sup>7</sup> And they reasoned among  
themselves, saying, *It is* be-  
cause we have taken no bread.

<sup>8</sup> *Which* when Jesus  
perceived, he said unto them,  
O ye of little faith,

why reason ye  
among yourselves, because ye  
have brought no bread?

<sup>9</sup> Do ye not yet understand,

neither remember

*Mark viii. 14—21.*

<sup>14</sup> Now the  
*disciples* had forgotten to take  
bread, neither had they in the  
ship with them more than one  
loaf.

<sup>15</sup> And he charged them,  
saying, Take heed, beware  
of the leaven of the Phari-  
sees,

and of the leaven of Herod.

<sup>16</sup> And they reasoned among  
themselves, saying, *It is* be-  
cause we have no bread.

<sup>17</sup> And when Jesus  
knew *it*, he saith unto them,

Why reason ye,

because ye  
have no bread?

perceive ye not yet,  
neither understand?

have ye your heart yet  
hardened?

<sup>18</sup> Having eyes, see ye not?  
and having ears, hear ye not?  
and do ye not remember?

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 52, 53, and Study of Gospels, p. 351.



*Matt. xvi. 5—12*

the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets

ye took up?

<sup>10</sup> Neither the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets

ye took up?

<sup>11</sup> How is it that ye do not understand that I spake *it* not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees? <sup>12</sup> Then understood they how that he bade *them* not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

*Mark viii. 14—21.*

<sup>19</sup> When I brake the five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments

took ye up?

They say unto him, Twelve.

<sup>20</sup> And when the seven among four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up?

And they said, Seven.

<sup>21</sup> And he said unto them, How is it that ye do not understand?

## SECTION IX

*THE BLIND MAN AT BETHSAIDA**Mark viii. 22—26.*

<sup>22</sup> And he cometh to Bethsaida; and they bring a blind man unto him, and besought him to touch him. <sup>23</sup> And he took the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the

town; and when he had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him if he saw ought. <sup>24</sup> And he looked up, and said, I see men as trees, walking. <sup>25</sup> After that

*Mark viii. 22—26.*

he put *his* hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up; and he was restored, and saw every man clearly. <sup>26</sup>And

he sent him away to his house, saying, Neither go into the town, nor tell *it* to any in the town.



## SECTION X

*Matt. xvi. 13—20.*

<sup>13</sup> When Jesus came  
into  
the coasts of Cesarea Philippi,

he asked his disciples,  
saying,  
Whom do men say that I  
the Son of man  
am?

<sup>14</sup> And they said,  
Some *say that thou art*  
John the Baptist: some,  
Elias; and others,  
Jeremias,  
or one of the prophets.

<sup>15</sup> He saith unto them,  
But whom say ye that I am?

<sup>16</sup> And Simon Peter answered  
and said,

Thou art the Christ,  
the Son of the living God.

<sup>17</sup> And Jesus answered and  
said unto him, Blessed art  
thou, Simon Bar-jona: for  
flesh and blood hath not  
revealed *it* unto thee, but  
my Father which is in hea-

*Mark viii. 27—30.*

<sup>27</sup> And Jesus went out,  
and his disciples into  
the towns of Cesarea Philippi\*:  
and by the way

he asked his disciples,  
saying unto them,  
Whom do men say that I  
am?

<sup>28</sup> And they answered,  
John the Baptist: but some  
*say* Elias; and others,  
One of the prophets.

<sup>29</sup> And he saith unto them,  
But whom say ye that I am?

And Peter answereth  
and saith  
unto him,  
Thou art the Christ.

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 61—63, and Study of Gospels, p. 352.

## THE GREAT CONFESSION OF ST. PETER

*Luke ix. 18—21.*

<sup>18</sup>And it came to pass, as  
he was alone praying, his dis-  
ciples were with him :

and he asked them,  
saying,  
Whom say the people that I

am ?

<sup>19</sup>They answering, said,

John the Baptist ; but some  
say Elias ; and others say,

that one of the old prophets  
is risen again.

<sup>20</sup>He said unto them,  
But whom say ye that I am ?

Peter, answering,  
said,

the Christ

of God.

*Matt. xvi. 13—20.*

ven. <sup>18</sup> And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. <sup>19</sup> And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

<sup>20</sup> Then charged he his disciples,

that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ.

*Mark viii. 27—30.*

<sup>30</sup> And he charged them

that they should tell no man of him.

*Matt. xvi. 21—23.*

<sup>21</sup> From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples,

how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things

of the elders, and chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day.

*Mark viii. 31—38; ix. 1.*

<sup>31</sup> And he began to teach them,

that the Son of man

must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and of the chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and after three days rise again.

## SECTION XI

*Luke ix. 18—21.*

<sup>21</sup>And he straitly charged  
them,  
and commanded *them*  
to tell no man that thing.

*THE PASSION FORETOLD*

*Luke ix. 22—27.*

<sup>22</sup>Saying,  
The Son of man  
must suffer many things,  
and be rejected of the  
elders, and chief priests,  
and scribes, and be slain,  
and be raised the third day.

*Matt.* xvi. 21—28.

<sup>22</sup>Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee.

<sup>23</sup>But he turned,

and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men.

<sup>24</sup>Then said Jesus unto his disciples,

If any *man* will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

<sup>25</sup>For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake

shall find it,

<sup>26</sup>For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?

or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

*Mark* viii. 31—38; ix. 1.

<sup>32</sup>And he spake that saying openly.

And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him.

<sup>33</sup>But when he had turned about and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behind me, Satan:

for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.

<sup>34</sup>And when he had called the people *unto him* with his disciples also, he said unto them,

Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

<sup>35</sup>For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's,

the same shall save it.

<sup>36</sup>For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?

<sup>37</sup>Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

---

*Luke ix. 22—27.*

<sup>23</sup>And he said to *them* all\*,  
If any *man* will come after  
me, let him deny himself,  
and take up his cross daily,  
and follow me.

<sup>24</sup>For whosoever will save  
his life shall lose it; but who-  
soever will lose his life for  
my sake,

the same shall save it.

<sup>25</sup>For what is a man advan-  
taged, if he gain the whole  
world, and lose himself,  
or be cast away?

\* See Study of Gospels, pp. 132. 353—355.

*Matt.* xvi. 21—28.

<sup>27</sup>For the Son of man  
shall come  
in the glory of his Father  
with his angels; and then he  
shall reward every man ac-  
cording to his works.

<sup>28</sup>Verily I say unto you,  
There be some  
standing here, which shall not  
taste of death, till they see  
the Son of man coming in his  
kingdom.

*Mark* viii. 31—38; ix. 1.

<sup>38</sup>Whosoever therefore shall  
be ashamed of me and of my  
words in this adulterous and  
sinful generation;  
of him also shall the Son of  
man be ashamed when he  
cometh  
in the glory of his Father  
with the holy angels.

*Mark* ix. 1.

<sup>1</sup>And he said unto them,  
Verily I say unto you, That  
there be some of them that  
stand here, which shall not  
taste of death, till they have  
seen

the kingdom of God come  
with power.

## SECTION XII

*Matt.* xvii. 1—13.

<sup>1</sup>And after six\* days Jesus  
taketh Peter,  
James, and John his brother,  
and bringeth them up into  
an high mountain apart,

*Mark* ix. 2—13.

<sup>2</sup>And after six\* days Jesus  
taketh *with him* Peter, and  
James, and John,  
and leadeth them up into  
an high mountain apart by

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 84.

*Luke ix. 22—27.*

<sup>26</sup> For whosoever shall  
be ashamed of me and of my  
words,

of him shall the Son of  
man be ashamed, when he  
shall come in his own glory,  
and *in his* Father's, and of  
the holy angels.

<sup>27</sup> But I tell you of a truth,  
there be some  
standing here, which shall not  
taste of death, till they see

the kingdom of God.

#### THE TRANSFIGURATION

*Luke ix. 28—36.*

<sup>28</sup> And it came to pass  
about an eight days after these  
sayings,

he  
took Peter and  
John and James,  
and went up into  
a mountain



*Matt.* xvii. 1—13.

<sup>2</sup> And  
was transfigured before them :  
and his face  
did shine as the sun,  
and his raiment was  
white as

the light.

<sup>3</sup> And behold, there  
appeared unto them

Moses and Elias  
talking with him.

<sup>4</sup> Then answered Peter, and  
said unto Jesus, Lord, it is  
good for us to be here: if thou  
wilt, let us make here three  
tabernacles; one for thee, and  
one for Moses, and one for  
Elias.

<sup>5</sup> While he yet spake,

*Mark* ix. 2—13.

themselves :

and he  
was transfigured before them.

<sup>3</sup> And his raiment became  
shining, exceeding white as  
snow ; so as no fuller on earth  
can white them.

<sup>4</sup> And there  
appeared unto them

Elias with Moses :  
and they were talking with  
Jesus.

<sup>5</sup> And Peter answered and  
said to Jesus, Master, it is  
good for us to be here :  
and let us make three  
tabernacles; one for thee, and  
one for Moses, and one for  
Elias.

<sup>6</sup> For he wist not what to  
say ; for they were sore afraid.

*Luke ix. 28—36.*

to pray.

<sup>29</sup> And as he prayed,

the fashion of his countenance  
was altered,

and his raiment *was*  
white *and*

glistening.

<sup>30</sup> And behold, there

talked with him two men,  
which were Moses and Elias:

<sup>31</sup> Who appeared in glory,  
and spake of his decease which  
he should accomplish at Jeru-  
salem. <sup>32</sup> But Peter and they  
that were with him were heavy  
with sleep: and when they  
were awake, they saw his  
glory, and the two men that  
stood with him. <sup>33</sup> And it came  
to pass, as they departed from  
him,

Peter  
said unto Jesus, Master, it is  
good for us to be here :  
and let us make three  
tabernacles; one for thee, and  
one for Moses, and one for  
Elias:

not knowing what he  
said.

<sup>34</sup> While he thus spake,

*Matt. xvii. 1—13.*

behold, a bright cloud  
overshadowed them :

and behold a voice  
out of the cloud, which said,  
This is my beloved Son,  
in whom I am well pleased :  
hear ye him.

<sup>6</sup> And when the disciples  
heard *it*, they fell on their face,  
and were sore afraid. <sup>7</sup> And  
Jesus came and touched them,  
and said, Arise, and be not  
afraid.

<sup>8</sup> And

when they had lifted up their  
eyes, they saw no man,  
save Jesus only.

<sup>9</sup> And as they came down  
from the mountain, Jesus  
charged them, saying,  
Tell the vision to no man ;  
until the Son of man  
be risen again from the  
dead.

<sup>10</sup> And his disciples asked  
him, saying,

*Mark ix. 2—13.*

<sup>7</sup> And there was a cloud  
that overshadowed them :

and a voice  
came out of the cloud, saying,  
This is my beloved Son :

hear him.

<sup>8</sup> And suddenly

when they had looked round  
about, they saw no man any  
more, save Jesus only with  
themselves.

<sup>9</sup> And as they came down  
from the mountain, he  
charged them, that they should  
tell no man what things they  
had seen, till the Son of  
man were risen from the  
dead.

<sup>10</sup> And they kept that saying  
with themselves,

questioning one with another  
what the rising from the dead  
should mean.

<sup>11</sup> And they asked him,  
saying,

*Luke ix. 28—36.*

there came a cloud,  
and overshadowed them: and  
they feared as they entered  
into the cloud.

<sup>25</sup> And there came a voice  
out of the cloud, saying,  
This is my beloved Son:

hear him.

<sup>36</sup> And when the voice was  
past,

Jesus was found alone.

And they kept *it* close, and  
told no man in those days any  
of those things which they had  
seen.

*Matt. xvii. 1—13.*

Why then say the scribes that Elias must first come?

<sup>11</sup> And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things.

<sup>12</sup> But I say unto you, That Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed.

Likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them. <sup>13</sup> Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.

*Mark ix. 2—13.*

Why say the scribes that Elias must first come?

<sup>12</sup> And he answered and told them, Elias verily cometh first, and restoreth all things; and how it is written of the Son of man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought\*.

<sup>13</sup> But I say unto you, That Elias is indeed come, and they have done unto him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him.

## SECTION XIII

*Matt. xvii. 14—21.*

<sup>14</sup> And when they were come to the multitude,

*Mark ix. 14—29.*

<sup>14</sup> And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the scribes questioning with them.

<sup>15</sup> And straightway all the

\* See Study of Gospels, pp. 353, 354.

*THE MANIAC BOY**Luke ix. 37—42.*

<sup>37</sup> And it came to pass, that  
on the next day \*, when they  
were come down from the hill,

much people met him.

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 106.

*Matt.* xvii. 14—21.

there came to him a *certain*  
man, kneeling down to him,

and saying,

<sup>15</sup> Lord have mercy on  
my son :

for he is lunatick, and sore  
vexed : for oft-times he falleth  
into the fire, and oft into the  
water.

<sup>16</sup> And I brought him to thy  
disciples,

and they could not cure him.

<sup>17</sup> Then Jesus answered and  
said, O faithless and perverse  
generation, how long shall  
I be with you? how long shall  
I suffer you? bring him hither  
to me.

*Mark* ix. 14—29.

people, when they beheld him,  
were greatly amazed, and run-  
ning to *him* saluted him.

<sup>16</sup> And he asked the scribes,  
What question ye with them?

<sup>17</sup> And one of the  
multitude answered and said,  
Master, I have brought unto  
thee my son,

which hath a dumb spirit;

<sup>18</sup> And wheresoever he taketh  
him, he teareth him :  
and he foameth,  
and gnasheth with his teeth,  
and pineth away :

and I spake to thy disciples  
that they should cast him out;  
and they could not.

<sup>19</sup> He answereth him, and  
saith, O faithless generation,  
how long shall  
I be with you? how long shall  
I suffer you? bring him  
unto me.

<sup>20</sup> And they brought him  
unto him ;

---

*Luke ix. 37—42.*

<sup>38</sup> And, behold, a man of the company cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee, look upon my son: for he is mine only child.

<sup>39</sup> And, lo, a spirit

taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out; and it teareth him that he foameth again,

and bruising him hardly departeth from him.

<sup>40</sup> And I besought thy disciples to cast him out; and they could not.

<sup>41</sup> And Jesus answering said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? and suffer you? bring thy son hither.

<sup>42</sup> And as he was yet a



*Matt.* xvii. 14—21.*Mark* ix. 14—29.

<sup>18</sup> And Jesus rebuked the devil;

and he departed  
out of him:

and the child was cured from

and when he saw him,  
straightway the spirit  
tare him;  
and he fell to the ground, and  
wallowed foaming. <sup>21</sup>And he  
asked his father, How long is  
it ago since this came unto  
him? And he said, Of a child.  
<sup>22</sup>And oft-times it hath cast  
him into the fire, and into  
the waters, to destroy him:  
but if thou canst do any thing,  
have compassion on us, and  
help us. <sup>23</sup>Jesus said unto  
him, If thou canst believe,  
all things *are* possible to him  
that believeth. <sup>24</sup>And straight-  
way the father of the child  
cried out, and said with tears,  
Lord, I believe; help thou  
mine unbelief. <sup>25</sup>When Jesus  
saw that the people came run-  
ning together, he rebuked the  
foul spirit, saying unto him,  
*Thou* dumb and deaf spirit,  
I charge thee, come out of  
him, and enter no more into  
him. <sup>26</sup>And *the spirit* cried,  
and rent him sore, and came  
out of him: and he was as  
one dead; insomuch that  
many said, He is dead. <sup>27</sup>But  
Jesus took him by the hand,  
and lifted him up; and he  
arose.

*Luke ix. 37—42.*

coming,

the devil threw him down  
and tare *him*.

And Jesus rebuked the  
unclean spirit,

and healed the child,

*Matt.* xvii. 14—21.  
that very hour.

*Mark* ix. 14—29.

<sup>19</sup> Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out ?

<sup>20</sup> And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief : for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place ; and it shall remove ; and nothing shall be impossible unto you.

<sup>21</sup> Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting.

<sup>23</sup> And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately, Why could not we cast him out ?

<sup>29</sup> And he said unto them,

This kind can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.

#### SECTION XIV

*Matt.* xvii. 22, 23.

*Mark* ix. 30—32.

<sup>22</sup> And while they abode in Galilee,

<sup>30</sup> And they departed thence, and passed through Galilee ; and

he would not that any man should know *it*.

Jesus

<sup>31</sup> For he taught his dis-

---

*Luke ix. 37—42.*

and delivered him again to his father.

*THE PASSION AGAIN FORETOLD*

*Luke ix. 43—45.*

<sup>43</sup> And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God. But while they wondered every one at all things which Jesus did,

•

*Matt.* xvii. 22, 23.  
said unto them,

The Son of man shall be  
betrayed into the hands of  
men :

<sup>23</sup> And they shall kill him,  
and

the third day he shall be  
raised again.

And they were exceeding  
sorry.

*Mark* ix. 30—32.  
ciples, and said unto them,

The Son of man is  
delivered into the hands of  
men,

and they shall kill him ;  
and after that he is killed,  
he shall rise the third day.

<sup>32</sup> But they understood not  
that saying,

and were afraid to ask him.

## SECTION XV

### THE SACRED DIDRACHMA

*Matt.* xvii. 24—27.

<sup>24</sup> And when they were come  
to Capernaum\*, they that re-  
ceived tribute-money came to  
Peter, and said, Doth not your  
Master pay tribute ? <sup>25</sup> He  
saith, Yes. And when he was  
come into the house, Jesus

prevented him, saying, What  
thinkest thou, Simon ? of  
whom do the kings of the  
earth take custom or tribute ?  
of their own children, or of  
strangers ? <sup>26</sup> Peter saith  
unto him, Of strangers.

\* See Study of Gospels, p. 354.

*Luke ix. 43—45.*

he said unto his disciples,

<sup>44</sup> Let these sayings sink  
down into your ears \* :  
for the Son of man shall be  
delivered into the hands of  
men.

<sup>45</sup> But they understood not  
this saying,

and it was hid from  
them, that they perceived it  
not :

and they feared to ask him  
of that saying †.

\* See Study of Gospels, p. 354.      † See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 119.

*Matt. xvii. 24—27.*

Jesus saith unto him, Then are the children free. <sup>27</sup>Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up the fish that first

cometh up; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

## SECTION XVI

*Matt. xviii. 1—5.**Mark ix. 33—37.*

<sup>33</sup>And he came to Capernaum. And being in the house, he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among yourselves by the way? <sup>34</sup>But they held their peace; for by the way they had disputed among themselves, who *should be* the greatest.

<sup>35</sup>And he sat down, and called the twelve and saith unto them, If any man desire to be first, *the same* shall be last of all, and servant of all.

<sup>1</sup>At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?

<sup>2</sup>And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of

<sup>36</sup>And he took a child, and set him in the midst of

† See Study of Gospels, pp. 354.

*WHICH SHALL BE THE GREATEST**Luke ix. 46—48.*

<sup>46</sup>Then there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be greatest.

<sup>47</sup>And Jesus perceiving the thought of their heart,

took  
a child,  
and set him by



*Matt. xviii. 1—5.*

them :

<sup>3</sup> And said,  
Verily I say unto you, Except  
ye be converted, and become  
as little children, ye shall not  
enter into the kingdom of  
heaven. <sup>4</sup>Whosoever there-  
fore shall humble himself as  
this little child, the same is  
greatest in the kingdom of  
heaven.

<sup>5</sup> And whoso shall receive  
one such little child in my  
name, receiveth me.

*Mark ix. 33—37.*

them :

and when he had taken him  
in his arms,  
he said unto them,

<sup>37</sup> Whosoever shall receive  
one of such children in my  
name, receiveth me:

and whosoever shall receive  
me, receiveth not me, but him  
that sent me.

*Matt. xviii. 6—9.*

## SECTION XVII

*Mark ix. 38—50.*

<sup>38</sup> And John answered him,  
saying, Master, we saw one  
casting out devils in thy name,  
and he followeth not us :

and we forbid him, because  
he followeth not us.

<sup>39</sup> But Jesus said,  
Forbid him not :

for there is no man which

*Luke ix. 46—48.*

him,

<sup>48</sup> And said unto them,

Whosoever shall receive  
this child in my  
name, receiveth me :  
and whosoever shall receive  
me receiveth him  
that sent me :  
for he that is least among you  
all, the same shall be great.

*FORBID HIM NOT*

*Luke ix. 49, 50.*

<sup>49</sup> And John answered and  
said, Master, we saw one  
casting out devils in thy name,

and we forbad him, because  
he followeth not us.

<sup>50</sup> And Jesus said unto him,  
Forbid *him* not :

*Matt.* xviii. 6—9.

<sup>6</sup>But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and *that* he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

<sup>7</sup>Woe unto the world because of offences! for it must needs be that offences come; but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh!

<sup>8</sup>Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off,

and cast *them* from thee:

it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire.

*Mark* ix. 38—50.

shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me.

<sup>40</sup>For he that is not against us is on our part.

<sup>41</sup>For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward\*.

<sup>42</sup>And whosoever shall offend one of *these* little ones that believe in me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the

sea.

<sup>43</sup>And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off:

it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands, to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:

<sup>44</sup>where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

<sup>45</sup>And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 134—136.

---

*Luke ix. 49, 50.*

for he that is not against  
us is for us.

*Matt.* xviii. 6—9.

And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.

*Mark* ix. 38—50.

thee to enter halt into life, than having two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: <sup>46</sup>where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

<sup>47</sup>And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire: <sup>48</sup>where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. <sup>49</sup>For every one shall be salted with fire, and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt. <sup>50</sup>Salt is good; but if the salt have lost his saltness, wherewith will ye season it? Have salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another.

## SECTION XVIII

### THE PARABLE OF FORGIVENESS \*

*Matt.* xviii. 10—35.

<sup>10</sup>Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven. <sup>11</sup>For

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 142.

*Matt. xviii. 10—35.*

the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.

<sup>12</sup>How think ye? if a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray? <sup>13</sup>And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that *sheep*, than of the ninety and nine which went not astray. <sup>14</sup>Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.

<sup>15</sup>Moreover, if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone; if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. <sup>16</sup>But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. <sup>17</sup>And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell *it* unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican. <sup>18</sup>Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye

shall bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

<sup>19</sup>Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth, as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven.

<sup>20</sup>For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

<sup>21</sup>Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? <sup>22</sup>Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven.

<sup>23</sup>Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants.

<sup>24</sup>And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. <sup>25</sup>But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. <sup>26</sup>The servant therefore fell down and worship-

*Matt. xviii. 10—35.*

ped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. <sup>27</sup> Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. <sup>28</sup> But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took *him* by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest. <sup>29</sup> And his fellow-servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. <sup>30</sup> And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. <sup>31</sup> So when his fellow-servants saw

what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. <sup>32</sup> Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt because thou desiredst me: <sup>33</sup> shouldst not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow-servant, even as I had pity on thee? <sup>34</sup> And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him. <sup>35</sup> So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

## PART VIII

### Teaching at Jerusalem \*

#### SECTION I

##### CHRIST URGED TO MANIFEST HIMSELF

*John vii. 2—10.*

NOW the Jews' feast of tabernacles was at hand. <sup>3</sup>His brethren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judea, that thy disciples also may see the works that thou doest. <sup>4</sup>For *there is* no man *that* doth any thing in secret, and he himself seeketh to be known openly. If thou do these things, shew thyself to the world. <sup>5</sup>For neither did his brethren believe in him. <sup>6</sup>Then Jesus said unto them, My time is not yet come but

your time is alway ready. <sup>7</sup>The world cannot hate you, but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil. <sup>8</sup>Go ye up unto this feast: I go not up yet unto this feast, for my time is not yet full come. <sup>9</sup>When he had said these words unto them, he abode *still* in Galilee.

<sup>10</sup>But when his brethren were gone up, then went he also up unto the feast: not openly, but as it were in secret.

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, Pt. iii. § i



## SECTION II

## CHRIST AT THE FEAST OF TABERNACLES

*John vii. 11—36.*

<sup>11</sup> Then the Jews sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he? <sup>12</sup> And there was much murmuring among the people concerning him: for some said, He is a good man: others said, Nay; but he deceiveth the people. <sup>13</sup> Howbeit no man spake openly of him, for fear of the Jews.

<sup>14</sup> Now about the midst of the feast, Jesus went up into the temple, and taught. <sup>15</sup> And the Jews marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man letters, having never learned? <sup>16</sup> Jesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me. <sup>17</sup> If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or *whether* I speak of myself. <sup>18</sup> He that speaketh of himself seeketh his own glory; but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him. <sup>19</sup> Did not Moses give you the law, and *yet* none of you keepeth the law? Why go ye about to kill me?

<sup>20</sup> The people answered and said, Thou hast a devil: who goeth about to kill thee?

<sup>21</sup> Jesus answered and said unto them, I have done one work, and ye all marvel.

<sup>22</sup> Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision, (not because it is of Moses, but of the fathers,) and ye on the sabbath-day circumcise a man. <sup>23</sup> If a man on the sabbath-day receive circumcision, that the law of Moses should not be broken; are ye angry at me, because I have made a man every whit whole on the sabbath-day? <sup>24</sup> Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.

<sup>25</sup> Then said some of them of Jerusalem, Is not this he whom they seek to kill?

<sup>26</sup> But lo, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing unto him: do the rulers know indeed that this is the very Christ? <sup>27</sup> Howbeit, we know this man whence he is: but when Christ cometh, no man knoweth whence he is. <sup>28</sup> Then

*John vii. 11—36.*

cried Jesus in the temple, as he taught, saying, Ye both know me, and ye know whence I am: and I am not come of myself, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not. <sup>29</sup> But I know him; for I am from him, and he hath sent me. <sup>30</sup> Then they sought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, because his hour was not yet come.

<sup>31</sup> And many of the people believed on him, and said, When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than these which this *man* hath done? <sup>32</sup> The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him; and

the Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to take him.

<sup>33</sup> Then said Jesus unto them, Yet a little while am I with you, and *then* I go unto him that sent me. <sup>34</sup> Ye shall seek me, and shall not find *me*: and where I am, *thither* ye cannot come. <sup>35</sup> Then said the Jews among themselves, Whither will he go, that we shall not find him? will he go unto the dispersed among the Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles? <sup>36</sup> What *manner of* saying is this that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find *me*: and where I am, *thither* ye cannot come?

## SECTION III

*THE LAST DAY OF THE FEAST**John vii. 37—53. viii. 1.*

<sup>37</sup> In the last day, that great *day* of the feast, Jesus stood, and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. <sup>38</sup> He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. <sup>39</sup> (But this spake he of the Spirit, which

they that believe on him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet *given*; because that Jesus was not yet glorified.

<sup>40</sup> Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said, Of a truth this is the Prophet. <sup>41</sup> Others said, This is the Christ. But some

*John* vii. 37—53. viii. 1.

said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee? <sup>42</sup> Hath not the scripture said, That Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was?

<sup>43</sup> So there was a division among the people, because of him. <sup>44</sup> And some of them would have taken him; but no man laid hands on him.

<sup>45</sup> Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said unto them, Why have ye not brought him? <sup>46</sup> The officers answered, Never man spake like this man. <sup>47</sup> Then answered them the Pharisees, Are ye also

deceived? <sup>48</sup> Have any of the rulers or of the Pharisees believed on him? <sup>49</sup> But this people who knoweth not the law are cursed. <sup>50</sup> Nicodemus saith unto them, (he that came to Jesus by night, being one of them,) <sup>51</sup> Doth our law judge *any* man before it hear him, and know what he doeth?

<sup>52</sup> They answered and said unto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search and look; for out of Galilee ariseth no prophet. <sup>53</sup> And every man went unto his own house.

<sup>1</sup> Jesus went unto the mount of Olives.

## SECTION IV

### THE WOMAN TAKEN IN ADULTERY

*John* viii. 2—11.

<sup>2</sup> And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him; and he sat down, and taught them. <sup>3</sup> And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery; and when they had set her in the midst, <sup>4</sup> they say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery,

in the very act. <sup>5</sup> Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou? <sup>6</sup> This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and with *his* finger wrote on the ground, *as though he heard them not*. <sup>7</sup> So when they continued asking him, he lifted

*John viii. 2—11.*

up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her. <sup>8</sup> And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground. <sup>9</sup> And they which heard *it*, being convicted by *their own* conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, *even* unto the last: and Jesus was left

alone, and the woman standing in the midst. <sup>10</sup> When Jesus had lifted up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee? <sup>11</sup> She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more.

## SECTION V

*THE LIGHT OF THE WORLD WILL LEAVE THE JEWS**John viii. 12—30.*

<sup>12</sup> Then spake Jesus again unto them\*, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life. <sup>13</sup> The Pharisees therefore said unto him, Thou bearest record of thyself; thy record is not true. <sup>14</sup> Jesus answered and said unto them, Though I bear record of myself, *yet* my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whither I go. <sup>15</sup> Ye judge after the flesh; I judge no man. <sup>16</sup> And yet if I judge, my judg-

ment is true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me. <sup>17</sup> It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true. <sup>18</sup> I am one that bear witness of myself, and the Father that sent me beareth witness of me. <sup>19</sup> Then said they unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor my Father: if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also. <sup>20</sup> These words spake Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him; for his hour was not yet

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 181.

*John viii.* 12—30.

come. <sup>21</sup>Then said Jesus again unto them, I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins: whither I go, ye cannot come. <sup>22</sup>Then said the Jews, Will he kill himself? because he saith, Whither I go, ye cannot come. <sup>23</sup>And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world. <sup>24</sup>I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am *he*, ye shall die in your sins. <sup>25</sup>Then said they unto him, Who art thou? And Jesus said unto them, Even *the same* that I said unto you from the beginning. <sup>26</sup>I

have many things to say and to judge of you: but he that sent me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him. <sup>27</sup>They understood not that he spake to them of the Father. <sup>28</sup>Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am *he*, and *that* I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things. <sup>29</sup>And he that sent me is with me: the Father hath not left me alone; for I do always those things that please him. <sup>30</sup>As he spake these words many believed on him.

## SECTION VI

### THE TRUE CHILDREN OF ABRAHAM

*John viii.* 31—59.

<sup>31</sup>Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, *then* are ye my disciples indeed; <sup>32</sup>and ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. <sup>33</sup>They answered him, We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest

thou, Ye shall be made free? <sup>34</sup>Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin. <sup>35</sup>And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: *but* the Son abideth ever. <sup>36</sup>If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed. <sup>37</sup>I



*John viii. 31—59.*

know that ye are Abraham's seed; but ye seek to kill me, because my word hath no place in you. <sup>38</sup>I speak that which I have seen with my Father: and ye do that which ye have seen with your father.

<sup>39</sup>They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father.

Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham.

<sup>40</sup>But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham.

<sup>41</sup>Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, *even* God. <sup>42</sup>Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me.

<sup>43</sup>Why do ye not understand my speech? *even* because ye cannot hear my word. <sup>44</sup>Ye are of *your* father the devil; and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him.

When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is

a liar; and the father of it.

<sup>45</sup>And because I tell *you* the truth, ye believe me not.

<sup>46</sup>Which of you convinceth me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me? <sup>47</sup>He that is of God heareth God's words: ye therefore hear *them* not, because ye are not of God.

<sup>48</sup>Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil?

<sup>49</sup>Jesus answered, I have not a devil; but I honour my Father, and ye do dishonour me.

<sup>50</sup>And I seek not mine own glory: there is one that seeketh and judgeth.

<sup>51</sup>Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death.

<sup>52</sup>Then said the Jews unto him, Now we know that thou hast a devil.

Abraham is dead, and the prophets, and thou sayest, If a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death.

<sup>53</sup>Art thou greater than our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thyself?

<sup>54</sup>Jesus answered, If I honour myself, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me; of whom ye say, that he is your God.

*John* viii. 31—59.

<sup>55</sup>Yet ye have not known him; but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I should be a liar like unto you: but I know him, and keep his saying. <sup>56</sup>Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day: and he saw *it*, and was glad. <sup>57</sup>Then said the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen

Abraham? <sup>58</sup>Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am.

<sup>59</sup>Then took they up stones to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.

## SECTION VII

### THE MAN BLIND FROM HIS BIRTH

*John* ix. 1—41.

<sup>1</sup>And as *Jesus* passed by \*, he saw a man which was blind from *his* birth. <sup>2</sup>And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man or his parents, that he was born blind? <sup>3</sup>Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him. <sup>4</sup>I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work. <sup>5</sup>As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world. <sup>6</sup>When he had thus spoken, he spat on the

ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay: <sup>7</sup>and said unto him, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam, (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing.

<sup>8</sup>The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seen him that he was blind, said, Is not this he that sat and begged? <sup>9</sup>Some said, This is he: others *said*, He is like him: *but* he said, I am *he*.

<sup>10</sup>Therefore said they unto him, How were thine eyes

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 204.

*John ix. 1—41.*

opened? <sup>11</sup>He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash: and I went and washed, and I received sight. <sup>12</sup>Then said they unto him, Where is he? He said, I know not.

<sup>13</sup>They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind. <sup>14</sup>And it was the sabbath-day when Jesus made the clay and opened his eyes. <sup>15</sup>Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see. <sup>16</sup>Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the sabbath-day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such miracles? And there was a division among them. <sup>17</sup>They say unto the blind man again, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is a prophet.

<sup>18</sup>But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight. <sup>19</sup>And

they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? how then doth he now see? <sup>20</sup>His parents answered them and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind: <sup>21</sup>but by what means he now seeth we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not, he is of age; ask him: he shall speak for himself. <sup>22</sup>These words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue. <sup>23</sup>Therefore said his parents, He is of age; ask him.

<sup>24</sup>Then again called they the man that was blind, and said unto him, Give God the praise: we know that this man is a sinner. <sup>25</sup>He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see. <sup>26</sup>Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes? <sup>27</sup>He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples? <sup>28</sup>Then they re-



*John ix. 1—41.*

viled him, and said, Thou art his disciple: but we are Moses' disciples. <sup>29</sup> We know that God spake unto Moses: *as for this fellow*, we know not from whence he is. <sup>30</sup> The man answered and said unto them, Why herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and *yet* he hath opened mine eyes. <sup>31</sup> Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth. <sup>32</sup> Since the world began, was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind. <sup>33</sup> If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.

<sup>34</sup> They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.

<sup>35</sup> Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God? <sup>36</sup> He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? <sup>37</sup> And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. <sup>38</sup> And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.

<sup>39</sup> And Jesus said, for judgment I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind. <sup>40</sup> And *some* of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also? <sup>41</sup> Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth.

## SECTION VIII

## THE SHEEP-FOLD AND GOOD SHEPHERD \*

*John x. 1—21.*

<sup>1</sup> Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber. <sup>2</sup> But he that entereth in by the door is the shepherd of the sheep. <sup>3</sup> To

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 219, 220.

*John x. 1—21.*

him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice; and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out.

<sup>4</sup>And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice.

<sup>5</sup>And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers.

<sup>6</sup>This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.

<sup>7</sup>Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep.

<sup>8</sup>All that ever came before me are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them.

<sup>9</sup>I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture.

<sup>10</sup>The thief cometh not but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have *it* more abundantly.

<sup>11</sup>I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep. <sup>12</sup>But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the

sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.

<sup>13</sup>The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep.

<sup>14</sup>I am the good shepherd, and know my *sheep*, and am known of mine.

<sup>15</sup>As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep.

<sup>16</sup>And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also

I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, *and* one shepherd.

<sup>17</sup>Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it

again. <sup>18</sup>No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself.

I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again.

This commandment have I received of my Father.

<sup>19</sup>There was a division therefore again among the Jews for these sayings.

<sup>20</sup>And many of them said, He hath a devil, and is mad; why hear ye him?

<sup>21</sup>Others said, These are not the words of him that hath a devil. Can a devil open the eyes of the blind?

## SECTION IX

## THE FEAST OF DEDICATION

*John x. 22—42.*

<sup>22</sup>And it was at Jerusalem the feast of the dedication, and it was winter. <sup>23</sup>And Jesus walked in the temple in Solomon's porch\*. <sup>24</sup>Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly. <sup>25</sup>Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me. <sup>26</sup>But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you. <sup>27</sup>My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me. <sup>28</sup>And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any *man* pluck them out of my hand. <sup>29</sup>My Father which gave *them* me, is greater than all; and no *man* is able to pluck *them* out of my Father's hand. <sup>30</sup>I and *my* Father are one.

<sup>31</sup>Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him.

<sup>32</sup>Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed you from my Father: for which of those works do ye stone me? <sup>33</sup>The Jews answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy; and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God. <sup>34</sup>Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, ye are gods? <sup>35</sup>If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken; <sup>36</sup>say ye of him whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God? <sup>37</sup>If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. <sup>38</sup>But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know and believe, that the Father *is* in me, and I in him.

<sup>39</sup>Therefore they sought again to take him: but he

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 233.

*John* x. 22—42.

escaped out of their hand,  
<sup>40</sup> and went away again beyond Jordan into the place where John at first baptized; and there he abode. <sup>41</sup> And

many resorted unto him, and said, John did no miracle: but all things that John spake of this man were true. <sup>42</sup> And many believed on him there.

## SECTION X

*THE SISTERS MARTHA AND MARY\**

*Luke* x. 38—42.

<sup>38</sup> Now it came to pass, as they went, that he entered into a certain village: and a certain woman, named Martha, received him into her house. <sup>39</sup> And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at Jesus' feet, and heard his word. <sup>40</sup> But Martha was cumbered about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that

my sister hath left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me. <sup>41</sup> And Jesus answered and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful and troubled about many things: <sup>42</sup> but one thing is needful: and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

## SECTION XI

*THE SICKNESS OF LAZARUS*

*John* xi. 1—16.

<sup>1</sup> Now a certain *man* was sick, *named* Lazarus, of Bethany, the town of Mary and her sister Martha†. <sup>2</sup> (It was *that* Mary which anointed

the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.) <sup>3</sup> Therefore his sisters sent unto him, saying, Lord,

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 240, 241.

† See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 248, 249.

*John xi. 1—16.*

behold, he whom thou lovest is sick. <sup>4</sup> When Jesus heard *that*, he said, This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby. <sup>5</sup> Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus. <sup>6</sup> When he had heard therefore that he was sick, he abode two days still in the same place where he was. <sup>7</sup> Then after that saith he to *his* disciples, Let us go into Judæa again. <sup>8</sup> *His* disciples say unto him, Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee; and goest thou thither again? <sup>9</sup> Jesus answered, Are there not twelve hours in the day? If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world.

<sup>10</sup> But if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him.

<sup>11</sup> These things said he: and after that he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth: but I go, that I may awake him out of sleep. <sup>12</sup> Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleep, he shall do well.

<sup>13</sup> Howbeit Jesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of taking of rest in sleep. <sup>14</sup> Then said Jesus unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead. <sup>15</sup> And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, to the intent ye may believe; nevertheless let us go unto him. <sup>16</sup> Then said Thomas, which is called Didymus, unto his fellow disciples, Let us also go, that we may die with him.

## SECTION XII

### THE RAISING OF LAZARUS

*John xi. 17—44.*

<sup>17</sup> Then when Jesus came, he found that he had *lain* in the grave four days already. <sup>18</sup> Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off: <sup>19</sup> and many of the Jews came to Martha and

Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother. <sup>20</sup> Then Martha, as soon as she heard that Jesus was coming, went and met him: but Mary sat *still* in the house. <sup>21</sup> Then said Martha unto Jesus, Lord,



*John xi. 17—44.*

if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. <sup>22</sup> But I know, that even now, whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give *it* thee. <sup>23</sup> Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again. <sup>24</sup> Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day. <sup>25</sup> Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: <sup>26</sup> and whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this? <sup>27</sup> She saith unto him, Yea, Lord: I believe that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world.

<sup>28</sup> And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is come, and calleth for thee. <sup>29</sup> As soon as she heard *that*, she arose quickly, and came unto him. <sup>30</sup> Now Jesus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place where Martha met him. <sup>31</sup> The Jews then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary, that she rose up hastily, and went out,

followed her, saying, She goeth unto the grave to weep there. <sup>32</sup> Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. <sup>33</sup> When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled, <sup>34</sup> and said, Where have ye laid him? They said unto him, Lord, come and see. <sup>35</sup> Jesus wept. <sup>36</sup> Then said the Jews, Behold how he loved him! <sup>37</sup> And some of them said, Could not this man, which opened the eyes of the blind, have caused that even this man should not have died? <sup>38</sup> Jesus therefore again groaning in himself, cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it. <sup>39</sup> Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been *dead* four days. <sup>40</sup> Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that, if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God? <sup>41</sup> Then

*John xi. 17—44.*

they took away the stone *from the place* where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up *his* eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me. <sup>42</sup> And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by I said *it*, that they may believe that

thou hast sent me. <sup>43</sup> And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. <sup>44</sup> And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with grave-clothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.

## SECTION XIII

## EFFECT OF THE MIRACLE

*John xi. 45—54.*

<sup>45</sup> Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, believed on him. <sup>46</sup> But some of them went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done.

<sup>47</sup> Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles. <sup>48</sup> If we let him thus alone, all *men* will believe on him: and the Romans shall come and take away both our place and nation. <sup>49</sup> And one of them, *named* Caiaphas, being the high

priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all, <sup>50</sup> nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not. <sup>51</sup> And this spake he not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation; <sup>52</sup> and not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one the children of God that were scattered abroad. <sup>53</sup> Then from that day forth they took counsel together for to put him to death.

---

*John xi. 45—54.*

<sup>54</sup> Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews ; but went thence unto a country near to the wilderness, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples \*.

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 267



## PART IX

### Last Journey from Galilee to Jerusalem

#### SECTIONS I\*, II

##### THE SEVENTY SENT FORTH

*Luke x. 1—16.*

**A**FTER these things the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before his face into every city, and place, whither he himself would come.

<sup>2</sup>Therefore said he unto them, The harvest truly is great, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest. <sup>3</sup>Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves. <sup>4</sup>Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes: and salute no man by the way. <sup>5</sup>And into whatsoever house ye enter, first

say, Peace be to this house. <sup>6</sup>And if the son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again. <sup>7</sup>And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house. <sup>8</sup>And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you. <sup>9</sup>And heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. <sup>10</sup>But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, Pt. iii. § i. On the "Order of Events."

*Luke x. 1—16.*

the same, and say, <sup>11</sup> Even the very dust of your city which cleaveth on us, we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding, be ye sure of this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. <sup>12</sup> But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city.

<sup>13</sup> Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon which have been done in you, they

had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. <sup>14</sup> But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgment, than for you. <sup>15</sup> And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven, shalt be thrust down to hell.

<sup>16</sup> He that heareth you, heareth me: and he that despiseth you, despiseth me: and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.

## SECTION III

## THE SEVENTY RETURN\*

*Luke x. 17—24.*

<sup>17</sup> And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name.

<sup>18</sup> And he said unto them I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven. <sup>19</sup> Behold,

I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy; and nothing shall by any means hurt you.

<sup>20</sup> Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are

subject unto you: but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven.

<sup>21</sup> In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes: even so, Father; for so it seemed good in thy sight.

<sup>22</sup> All things are delivered to me of my Father: and no

\* See Ministry, 3d Year, p. 289.

*Luke x. 17—24.*

man knoweth who the Son is, but the Father; and who the Father is, but the Son, and *he* to whom the Son will reveal *him*.

<sup>23</sup> And he turned him unto *his* disciples, and said privately, Blessed *are* the eyes

which see the things that ye see; <sup>24</sup> for I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen *them*; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard *them*.

## SECTION IV

## THE PARABLE OF THE GOOD SAMARITAN \*

*Luke x. 25—37.*

<sup>25</sup> And, behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? <sup>26</sup> He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou? <sup>27</sup> And he answering, said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself. <sup>28</sup> And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live.

<sup>29</sup> But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour? <sup>30</sup> And Jesus answering, said, A cer-

tain *man* went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded *him*, and departed, leaving *him* half dead. <sup>31</sup> And by chance there came down a certain priest that way; and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side. <sup>32</sup> And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked *on him*, and passed by on the other side. <sup>33</sup> But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him he had compassion *on him*, <sup>34</sup> and went to *him*, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 294, 295.

*Luke x. 25—37.*

own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. <sup>35</sup> And on the morrow, when he departed, he took out two pence, and gave *them* to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will

repay thee. <sup>36</sup> Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him that fell among the thieves? <sup>37</sup> And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.

## SECTION V

*THE DISCIPLES TAUGHT TO PRAY**Luke xi. 1—13.*

<sup>1</sup> And it came to pass, that as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples. <sup>2</sup> And he said unto them, When ye pray, say, Our Father which art in heaven, hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so in earth. <sup>3</sup> Give us day by day our daily bread. <sup>4</sup> And forgive us our sins; for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation; but deliver us from evil.

<sup>5</sup> And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him

at midnight, and say unto him, Friend, lend me three loaves: <sup>6</sup> for a friend of mine in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him?

<sup>7</sup> And he from within shall answer, and say, Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed: I cannot rise and give thee. <sup>8</sup> I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will rise and give him as many as he needeth. <sup>9</sup> And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. <sup>10</sup> For every one that asketh, receiveth; and

*Luke xi. 1—13.*

he that seeketh, findeth; and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened. <sup>11</sup>If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if *he ask* a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent? <sup>12</sup>Or if he shall ask an

egg, will he offer him a scorpion? <sup>13</sup>If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall *your* heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?

## SECTION VI

*THE WOMAN BOWED DOWN WITH INFIRMITY \**

*Luke xiii. 10—17.*

<sup>10</sup>And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath. <sup>11</sup>And, behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up *herself*. <sup>12</sup>And when Jesus saw her, he called *her to him*, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity. <sup>13</sup>And he laid *his* hands on her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God.

<sup>14</sup>And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath-day, and said unto the people, There

are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath-day. <sup>15</sup>The Lord then answered him, and said, *Thou hypocrite*, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or *his* ass from the stall, and lead *him* away to watering? <sup>16</sup>And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath-day? <sup>17</sup>And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 312, 313

## SECTION VII

## ARE THERE FEW THAT BE SAVED?

*Luke xiii. 22—35.*

<sup>22</sup>And he went through the cities and villages, teaching, and journeying toward Jerusalem.

<sup>23</sup>Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved? And he said unto them, <sup>24</sup>Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able.

<sup>25</sup>When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are: <sup>26</sup>then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets. <sup>27</sup>But he shall say, I tell you I know you not whence ye are; depart from me all ye workers of iniquity. <sup>28</sup>There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets in the kingdom

of God, and you yourselves thrust out. <sup>29</sup>And they shall come from the east, and from the west, and from the north, and from the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God. <sup>30</sup>And, behold, there are last which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last.

<sup>31</sup>The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, saying unto him, Get thee out, and depart hence: for Herod will kill thee. <sup>32</sup>And he said unto them, Go ye, and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I do cures to-day and to-morrow, and the third day I shall be perfected. <sup>33</sup>Nevertheless I must walk to-day, and to-morrow, and the day following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem. <sup>34</sup>O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee; how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen doth gather her brood under



*Luke xiii. 22—35.*

*her wings, and ye would not?* see me, until *the time* come  
<sup>35</sup> Behold, your house is left when ye shall say, Blessed is  
 unto you desolate: and verily he that cometh in the name  
 I say unto you, Ye shall not of the Lord\*.

## SECTION VIII

### THE DROPSY HEALED ON THE SABBATH

*Luke xiv. 1—6.*

<sup>1</sup>And it came to pass, as he went into the house of one of the Chief Pharisees to eat bread on the sabbath-day, that they watched him. <sup>2</sup>And, behold, there was a certain man before him which had the dropsy. <sup>3</sup>And Jesus answering, spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath-day? <sup>4</sup>And they held their peace. And he took *him*, and healed him, and let him go: <sup>5</sup>and answered them, saying, Which of you shall have an ass or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the sabbath-day? <sup>6</sup>And they could not answer him again to these things.

## SECTION IX

### THE PARABLES AT THE FEAST†

*Luke xiv. 7—14.*

<sup>7</sup>And he put forth a parable to those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief rooms; saying unto them, <sup>8</sup>When thou art bidden of any *man* to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room; lest a more honourable man than thou be bidden of him; <sup>9</sup>and he that bade thee and him, come and say to thee, Give

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 321.

† See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 325.



*Luke xiv. 7—14.*

this man place; and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room. <sup>10</sup> But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room; that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee. <sup>11</sup> For whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

<sup>12</sup> Then said he also to him

that bade him, When thou makest a dinner, or a supper, call not thy friends nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor *thy* rich neighbours; lest they also bid thee again, and a recompence be made thee. <sup>13</sup> But when thou makest a feast, call the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind; <sup>14</sup> and thou shalt be blessed; for they cannot recompense thee; for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just.

## SECTION X

*THE GREAT SUPPER**Luke xiv. 15—24.*

<sup>15</sup> And when one of them that sat at meat with him heard these things, he said unto him, Blessed *is* he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God. <sup>16</sup> Then said he unto him, A certain man made a great supper, and bade many; <sup>17</sup> and sent his servant at supper-time to say to them that were bidden, Come; for all things are now ready. <sup>18</sup> And they all with one *consent* began to make excuse. The first

said unto him, I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go and see it; I pray thee have me excused. <sup>19</sup> And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excused. <sup>20</sup> And another said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come. <sup>21</sup> So that servant came, and shewed his lord these things. Then the master of the house, being angry, said

*Luke xiv. 15—24.*

to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind. <sup>22</sup>And the servant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room.

<sup>23</sup>And the lord said unto the servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel *them*, to come in, that my house may be filled. <sup>24</sup>For I say unto you, That none of those men which were bidden shall taste of my supper.

## SECTION XI

*ALL MUST BE RENOUNCED FOR CHRIST*

*Luke xiv. 25—35.*

<sup>25</sup>And there went great multitudes with him : and he turned, and said unto them, <sup>26</sup>If any *man* come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. <sup>27</sup>And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple. <sup>28</sup>For which of you intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have *sufficient* to finish *it*? <sup>29</sup>Lest haply, after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish *it*, all that behold *it* begin to

mock him, <sup>30</sup>saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish. <sup>31</sup>Or what king going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand? <sup>32</sup>Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassador, and desireth conditions of peace. <sup>33</sup>So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

<sup>34</sup>Salt is good : but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be sea-

*Luke xiv. 25—35.*

soned? <sup>35</sup> It is neither fit for that hath ears to hear, let the land, nor yet for the dung-hill; *but* men cast it out. He him hear.

## SECTION XII

*THE LOST SHEEP AND THE LOST PIECE OF MONEY \**

*Luke xv. 1—10.*

<sup>1</sup>Then drew near unto him all the publicans and sinners for to hear him. <sup>2</sup>And the Pharisees and scribes murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them. <sup>3</sup>And he spake this parable unto them, saying, <sup>4</sup>What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost until he find it? <sup>5</sup>And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing. <sup>6</sup>And when he cometh home, he calleth together *his* friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me; for I have

found my sheep which was lost. <sup>7</sup>I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.

<sup>8</sup>Either what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find it? <sup>9</sup>And when she hath found it, she calleth *her* friends and *her* neighbours together, saying, Rejoice with me; for I have found the piece which I had lost. <sup>10</sup>Likewise, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 338

## SECTION XIII

## THE PRODIGAL SON

*Luke* xv. 11—32.

<sup>11</sup>And he said, A certain man had two sons: <sup>12</sup>and the younger of them said to *his* father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them *his* living. <sup>13</sup>And not many days after, the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living. <sup>14</sup>And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want. <sup>15</sup>And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. <sup>16</sup>And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him.

<sup>17</sup>And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! <sup>18</sup>I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father,

I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, <sup>19</sup>and am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. <sup>20</sup>And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. <sup>21</sup>And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son. <sup>22</sup>But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put *it* on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on *his* feet: <sup>23</sup>and bring hither the fatted calf, and kill *it*; and let us eat and be merry: <sup>24</sup>for this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.

<sup>25</sup>Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing. <sup>26</sup>And he called one of the

*Luke xv. 11—32.*

servants, and asked what these things meant. <sup>27</sup> And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound. <sup>28</sup> And he was angry, and would not go in.

Therefore came his father out, and intreated him. <sup>29</sup> And he answering, said to his father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment: and yet thou

never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends: <sup>30</sup> but as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf. <sup>31</sup> And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine. <sup>32</sup> It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

## SECTION XIV

*THE UNJUST STEWARD**Luke xvi. 1—13.*

<sup>1</sup> And he said also unto his disciples\*, There was a certain rich man, which had a steward; and the same was accused unto him that he had wasted his goods. <sup>2</sup> And he called him, and said unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy stewardship; for thou mayest be no longer steward. <sup>3</sup> Then the steward said within himself, What shall I do? for my lord taketh away from me the stew-

ardship: I cannot dig; to beg I am ashamed. <sup>4</sup> I am resolved what to do, that, when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses. <sup>5</sup> So he called every one of his lord's debtors *unto him*, and said unto the first, How much owest thou unto my lord? <sup>6</sup> And he said, An hundred measures of oil. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and sit down quickly, and write fifty. <sup>7</sup> Then said

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 359—361.



*Luke xvi. 1—13.*

he to another, And how much owest thou? And he said, An hundred measures of wheat. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and write fourscore. <sup>8</sup>And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiser than the children of light.

<sup>9</sup>And I say unto you, Make to yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness; that, when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations. <sup>10</sup>He that is faithful in that which is least, is

faithful also in much: and he that is unjust in the least is unjust also in much. <sup>11</sup>If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches? <sup>12</sup>And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another man's, who shall give you that which is your own? <sup>13</sup>No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

## SECTION XV

*THE RICH MAN AND LAZARUS**Luke xvi. 14—31.*

<sup>14</sup>And the Pharisees also, who were covetous, heard all these things: and they derided him. <sup>15</sup>And he said unto them, Ye are they which justify yourselves before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men is abomination in the sight of God.

<sup>16</sup>The law and the prophets were until John: since that

time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man presseth into it. <sup>17</sup>And it is easier for heaven and earth to pass, than one tittle of the law to fail.

<sup>18</sup>Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoever marrieth her that is put away from her husband committeth adultery.

<sup>19</sup>There was a certain rich

*Luke xvi. 14—31.*

man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day: <sup>20</sup>and there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores, <sup>21</sup>and desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores. <sup>22</sup>And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried; <sup>23</sup>and in hell he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. <sup>24</sup>And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. <sup>25</sup>But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good

things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented. <sup>26</sup>And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that *would come* from thence. <sup>27</sup>Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house: <sup>28</sup>for I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. <sup>29</sup>Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets, let them hear them. <sup>30</sup>And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent. <sup>31</sup>And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.



## SECTION XVI

## DISCIPLES WARNED OF OFFENCES

*Luke xvii. 1—10.*

<sup>1</sup>Then said he unto the disciples, It is impossible but that offences will come: but woe *unto him*, through whom they come! <sup>2</sup>It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones. <sup>3</sup>Take heed to yourselves: If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him. <sup>4</sup>And if he trespass against thee seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him.

<sup>5</sup>And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith. <sup>6</sup>And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye might say unto this sycamine tree, Be thou

plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the sea; and it should obey you. <sup>7</sup>But which of you, having a servant plowing or feeding cattle, will say unto him by and by, when he is come from the field, Go and sit down to meat? <sup>8</sup>And will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken; and afterward thou shalt eat and drink? <sup>9</sup>Doth he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded him; I trow not. <sup>10</sup>So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.

## SECTION XVII

## THE ZEAL OF JAMES AND JOHN REPROVED \*

*Luke ix. 51—56.*

<sup>51</sup> And it came to pass, he should be received up, he when the time was come that stedfastly set his face to go

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 397.

*Luke ix. 51—56.*

to Jerusalem, <sup>52</sup>and sent messengers before his face: and they went, and entered into a village of the Samaritans, to make ready for him. <sup>53</sup>And they did not receive him, because his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem. <sup>54</sup>And when his disciples, James and John, saw *this*, they said, Lord, wilt

thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as Elias did? <sup>55</sup>But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of. <sup>56</sup>For the Son of man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save *them*. And they went to another village.

## SECTION XVIII

### THE TEN LEPERS

*Luke xvii. 11—19.*

<sup>11</sup>And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. <sup>12</sup>And as he entered into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off: <sup>13</sup>and they lifted up *their* voices, and said, Jesus, Master, have mercy on us. <sup>14</sup>And when he saw *them*, he said unto them, Go shew yourselves unto the priests. And it came to pass, that, as they went, they were cleansed. <sup>15</sup>And one of them,

when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God, <sup>16</sup>and fell down on *his* face at his feet, giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritan. <sup>17</sup>And Jesus answering, said, Were there not ten cleansed? but where *are* the nine? <sup>18</sup>There are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger. <sup>19</sup>And he said unto him, Arise, go thy way: thy faith hath made thee whole.

## SECTION XIX

## ON THE COMING OF THE KINGDOM

*Luke xvii. 20—37.*

<sup>20</sup> And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come\*, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: <sup>21</sup> Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.

<sup>22</sup> And he said unto the disciples, The days will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and ye shall not see it. <sup>23</sup> And they shall say to you, See here; or, see there: go not after *them*, nor follow *them*. <sup>24</sup> For as the lightning, that lighteneth out of the one *part* under heaven, shineth unto the other *part* under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his day. <sup>25</sup> But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation. <sup>26</sup> And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man. <sup>27</sup> They

did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all. <sup>28</sup> Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded; <sup>29</sup> but the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed *them all*. <sup>30</sup> Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed. <sup>31</sup> In that day, he which shall be upon the house-top, and his stuff in the house, let him not come down to take it away: and he that is in the field, let him likewise not return back. <sup>32</sup> Remember Lot's wife. <sup>33</sup> Whosoever shall seek to save his life shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it. <sup>34</sup> I tell you, in that night there shall be *two men* in one bed; the one shall be taken, and the

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 407.

*Luke xvii. 20—37.*

other shall be left. <sup>35</sup>Two women shall be grinding together; the one shall be taken, and the other left. <sup>36</sup>Two men shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the

other left. <sup>37</sup>And they answered and said unto him, Where, Lord? And he said unto them, Wheresoever the body is, thither will the eagles be gathered together.

## SECTION XX

*THE IMPORTUNATE WIDOW**Luke xviii. 1—8.*

<sup>1</sup>And he spake a parable unto them *to this end*, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint; <sup>2</sup>saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man: <sup>3</sup>and there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, saying, *Avenge me of mine adversary.* <sup>4</sup>And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; <sup>5</sup>yet

because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me. <sup>6</sup>And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith. <sup>7</sup>And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them? <sup>8</sup>I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?

## SECTION XXI

*THE PHARISEE AND THE PUBLICAN**Luke xviii. 9—14.*

<sup>9</sup>And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were

righteous, and despised others: <sup>10</sup>Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a

*Luke xviii. 9—14.*

Pharisee, and the other a publican. <sup>11</sup> The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men *are*, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. <sup>12</sup> I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess. <sup>13</sup> And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so

much as *his* eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner. <sup>14</sup> I tell you, this man went down to his house justified *rather* than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

## SECTION XXII

### DIVORCE AND CHASTITY\*

*Matt. xix. 1—12.*

<sup>1</sup> And it came to pass, *that* when Jesus had finished these sayings,

he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judea, beyond

Jordan;

<sup>2</sup> And great multitudes followed him:

and he healed them there.

<sup>3</sup> The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?

*Mark x. 1—12.*

<sup>1</sup> And he arose from thence, and cometh into the coasts of Judea by the farther side of Jordan:

and the people resort unto him again; and, as he was wont, he taught them again.

<sup>2</sup> And the Pharisees came to him, and asked him, Is it lawful for a man to put away *his* wife? tempting him.

<sup>3</sup> And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 432.

*Matt. xix. 1—12.*

<sup>4</sup> And he answered and said unto them,

Have ye not read, that he which made *them* at the beginning made them male and female,

<sup>5</sup> And said,  
For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife:

and they twain shall be one flesh?

<sup>6</sup> Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh.

What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.

<sup>7</sup> They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away?

<sup>8</sup> He saith unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so.

<sup>9</sup> And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his

*Mark x. 1—12.*

command you? <sup>4</sup> And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put *her* away.

<sup>5</sup> And Jesus answered and said unto them,  
For the hardness of your heart he wrote you this precept.

<sup>6</sup> But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female.

<sup>7</sup> For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife;

<sup>8</sup> And they twain shall be one flesh:

so then they are no more twain, but one flesh.

<sup>9</sup> What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.

<sup>10</sup> And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same *matter*.

<sup>11</sup> And he saith unto them, Whosoever shall put away his



*Matt. xix. 1—12.*

wife,  
except *it be* for fornication,  
and shall marry another, com-  
mitteth adultery :

and whoso marrieth her which  
is put away doth commit adul-  
tery.

<sup>10</sup> His disciples say unto  
him, If the case of the man be  
so with *his* wife, it is not good  
to marry. <sup>11</sup> But he said unto  
them, All *men* cannot receive  
this saying, save *they* to whom  
it is given. <sup>12</sup> For there are  
some eunuchs, which were  
so born from *their* mother's  
womb: and there are some  
eunuchs, which were made  
eunuchs of men: and there be  
eunuchs, which have made  
themselves eunuchs for the  
kingdom of heaven's sake.  
He that is able to receive *it*,  
let him receive *it*.

*Matt. xix. 13—15.*

<sup>13</sup> Then there were brought  
unto him little children, that

*Mark x. 1—12.*

wife,

and marry another, com-  
mitteth adultery  
against her.

<sup>12</sup> And if a woman shall put  
away her husband, and be  
married to another, she com-  
mitteth adultery.

## SECTION XXIII

*Mark x. 13—16.*

<sup>13</sup> And they brought  
young children to him, that



*LITTLE CHILDREN BROUGHT TO CHRIST* \**Luke* xviii. 15—17.

<sup>15</sup> And they brought  
unto him also infants, that

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 439. 127—129.

*Matt.* xix. 13—15.

he should put *his* hands on them, and pray :

and the disciples rebuked them.

<sup>14</sup> But Jesus

said,

Suffer little children and forbid them not to come unto me, for of such is the kingdom of heaven.

<sup>15</sup> And he  
laid *his* hands on them,  
and departed thence.

*Matt.* xix. 16—30.

<sup>16</sup> And, behold, one came

and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life ?

<sup>17</sup> And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good ?

*Mark* x. 13—16.

he should touch them :

and *his* disciples rebuked those that brought *them*.

<sup>14</sup> But when Jesus saw it he was much displeased,

and said unto them,

Suffer the little children to come unto me and forbid them not : for of such is the kingdom of God.

<sup>15</sup> Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein.

<sup>16</sup> And he took them up in his arms, put *his* hands upon them, and blessed them.

## SECTION XXIV

*Mark* x. 17—31.

<sup>17</sup> And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do, that I may inherit eternal life ?

<sup>18</sup> And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good ?

*Luke xviii. 15—17.*

he would touch  
them :

but when  
*his* disciples saw *it*, they  
rebuked them,

<sup>16</sup> But Jesus

called them *unto him*, and  
said,

Suffer little children to  
come unto me, and forbid them  
not; for of such is the king-  
dom of God.

<sup>17</sup> Verily I say unto you,  
Whosoever shall not receive  
the kingdom of God as a little  
child, shall in no wise enter  
therein

#### THE RICH YOUNG RULER

*Luke xviii. 18—30.*

<sup>18</sup> And a certain ruler

asked him, saying, Good  
Master, what shall I do to  
inherit eternal life ?

<sup>19</sup> And Jesus said unto him,  
Why callest thou me good ?

*Matt. xix. 16—30.*

*there is none good but one,  
that is, God.*

but if thou wilt enter into  
life, keep the commandments.

<sup>18</sup> He saith unto him, Which?  
Jesus said,

Thou shalt do no  
murder, Thou shalt not commit  
adultery, Thou shalt not steal,  
Thou shalt not bear false wit-  
ness,

<sup>19</sup> Honour thy father and  
thy mother : and, Thou shalt  
love thy neighbour as thyself.

<sup>20</sup> The young man saith  
unto him, All these things  
have I kept, from my youth  
up : what lack I yet ?

<sup>21</sup> Jesus  
said unto him, If thou wilt be  
perfect,

go and sell that  
thou hast, and give to the  
poor, and thou shalt have trea-  
sure in heaven ; and come

and follow me.

<sup>22</sup> But when the young man  
heard that saying, he went  
away sorrowful : for he had  
great possessions.

<sup>23</sup> Then said Jesus unto his

*Mark x. 17—31.*

*there is none good but one,  
that is, God.*

<sup>19</sup> Thou knowest the com-  
mandments,

Do not commit  
adultery, Do not  
kill, Do not steal,

Do not bear false wit-  
ness, Defraud not,

Honour thy father and  
mother.

<sup>20</sup> And he answered and said  
unto him, Master, all these  
have I observed from my  
youth.

<sup>21</sup> Then Jesus beholding him  
loved him, and said unto him,

One thing thou lackest :  
go thy way, sell whatsoever  
thou hast, and give to the  
poor, and thou shalt have trea-  
sure in heaven : and come,  
take up the cross,  
and follow me.

<sup>22</sup> And he was sad at  
that saying, and went  
away grieved : for he had  
great possessions.

<sup>23</sup> And Jesus looked round

*Luke xviii. 18—30.*

none *is* good, save one,  
*that is*, God.

<sup>20</sup> Thou knowest the com-  
mandments,

Do not commit  
adultery, Do not  
kill, Do not steal,

Do not bear false wit-  
ness,

Honour thy father and  
thy mother.

<sup>21</sup> And he said,  
All these  
have I kept from my youth  
up.

<sup>22</sup> Now when Jesus heard  
these things, he said unto him,

Yet lackest thou one thing :  
sell all that  
thou hast, and distribute unto  
the poor, and thou shalt have  
treasure in heaven : and come,

follow me.

<sup>23</sup> And when he  
heard this, he was very  
sorrowful : for he was  
very rich.

<sup>24</sup> And when Jesus saw that  
he was very sorrowful,

*Matt. xix. 16—30.*

disciples, Verily I say unto you, That a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven.

<sup>24</sup> And again I say unto you,

It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

<sup>25</sup> When his disciples heard *it*, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved?

<sup>26</sup> But Jesus beheld *them*, and said unto them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible.

<sup>27</sup> Then answered Peter and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee; what shall we have therefore?

<sup>28</sup> And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall

*Mark x. 17—31.*

about, and saith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

<sup>24</sup> And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God!

<sup>25</sup> It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

<sup>26</sup> And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved?

<sup>27</sup> And Jesus, looking upon them saith, With men *it is* impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

<sup>28</sup> Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee.

<sup>29</sup> And Jesus answered and said,

*Luke* xviii. 18—30.

he said,

How hardly shall they  
that have riches enter into  
the kingdom of God!

<sup>25</sup> For it is easier for a camel  
to go through a needle's  
eye, than for a rich man  
to enter into the kingdom of  
God.

<sup>26</sup> And they that heard

*it*, said, Who then can  
be saved?

<sup>27</sup> And he  
said, The things which are  
impossible with men, are  
possible with God.

<sup>28</sup> Then Peter  
said, Lo, we  
have left all, and followed  
thee.

<sup>29</sup> And he  
said unto them,



*Matt. xix. 16—30.*

sit in the throne of his glory,  
ye also shall sit upon twelve  
thrones, judging the twelve  
tribes of Israel.

<sup>29</sup> And every one that hath  
forsaken houses, or brethren,  
or sisters, or father, or mother,  
or wife, or children, or lands,  
for my name's sake,

shall receive an  
hundred fold,

and shall inherit  
everlasting life.

<sup>30</sup> But many *that are* first  
shall be last; and the last  
*shall be* first.

*Mark x. 17—31.*

Verily I say unto you,  
There is no man that hath  
left house, or brethren,  
or sisters, or father, or mother,  
or wife, or children, or lands,  
for my sake and the Gospel's,

<sup>30</sup> But he shall receive an  
hundred fold now in this  
time, houses, and brethren, and  
sisters, and mothers, and chil-  
dren, and lands, with perse-  
cutions; and in the world to  
come eternal life.

<sup>31</sup> But many *that are* first  
shall be last; and the last  
first.

## SECTION XXV

## THE LABOURERS IN THE VINEYARD

*Matt. xx. 1—16.*

<sup>1</sup> For the kingdom of hea-  
ven is like unto a man *that is*  
an householder, which went  
out early in the morning to  
hire labourers into his vine-  
yard. <sup>2</sup> And when he had  
agreed with the labourers for  
a penny a day, he sent them  
into his vineyard. <sup>3</sup> And he

went out about the third hour,  
and saw others standing idle  
in the market place, <sup>4</sup> and  
said unto them, Go ye also  
into the vineyard, and what-  
soever is right I will give you.  
And they went their way.  
<sup>5</sup> Again he went out about  
the sixth and ninth hour, and

---

*Luke xviii. 18—30.*

Verily I say unto you,  
There is no man that hath  
left house, or brethren,  
or parents,  
or wife, or children, for

the kingdom of God's sake,  
<sup>30</sup> Who shall not receive  
manifold more in this present  
time,

and in the world to  
come life everlasting.

*Matt. xx. 1—16.*

did likewise. <sup>6</sup> And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle? <sup>7</sup> They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, *that* shall ye receive. <sup>8</sup> So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and give them *their* hire, beginning from the last unto the first. <sup>9</sup> And when they came that *were hired* about

*Matt. xx. 1—16.*

the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny.

<sup>10</sup> But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more; and they likewise received every man a penny. <sup>11</sup> And when they had

received *it*, they murmured against the good man of the house, <sup>12</sup> saying, These last have wrought *but* one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat

## SECTION XXVI

*Matt. xx. 17—19.*

<sup>17</sup> And Jesus going up to Jerusalem

took the twelve disciples apart in the way, and said unto them,

<sup>18</sup> Behold, we go up to Jerusalem;

and the Son of man shall be betrayed unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes, and they shall condemn him to death,

*Mark x. 32—34.*

<sup>32</sup> And they were in the way going up to Jerusalem; and Jesus

went before them: and they were amazed; and as they followed, they were afraid\*.

And he took again the twelve,

and began to tell them what things should happen unto him,

<sup>33</sup> *Saying*, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem;

and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes and they shall condemn him to death,

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 466.

*Matt. xx. 1—16.*

of the day. <sup>13</sup> But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a penny? <sup>14</sup> Take *that* thine *is*, and go thy way: I will give unto this last, even as unto thee. <sup>15</sup> Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? Is thine eye evil, because I am good? <sup>16</sup> So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen.

*THE PASSION AGAIN FORETOLD**Luke xviii. 31—34.*

<sup>31</sup> Then he took *unto him* the twelve,  
and said unto them,

Behold, we go up  
to Jerusalem, and all things  
that are written by the prophets  
concerning the Son of  
man shall be accomplished.

*Matt. xx. 17—19.*

<sup>19</sup> And shall deliver him to  
the Gentiles

to mock,

and to scourge,

and to crucify *him*:

and the third day he shall  
rise again.

*Mark x. 32—34.*

and shall deliver him to  
the Gentiles:

<sup>34</sup> And they shall mock him,

and shall scourge  
him,

and shall spit upon him,  
and shall kill him;

and the third day he shall  
rise again.

## SECTION XXVII

### THE REQUEST OF JAMES AND JOHN \*

*Matt. xx. 20—23.*

<sup>20</sup> Then came to him the  
mother of Zebedee's children  
with her sons,

worshipping *him*,

and desiring a certain thing of  
him.

<sup>21</sup> And he said unto her,  
What wilt thou?

She saith unto him, Grant  
that these my two sons may

*Mark x. 35—45.*

<sup>35</sup> And James and John the  
sons of Zebedee come unto  
him,

saying, Master, we would that  
thou shouldest do for us  
whatsoever we shall desire.

<sup>36</sup> And he said unto them,  
What would ye that I should  
do for you?

<sup>37</sup> They said unto him, Grant  
unto us that we may

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 469.

*Luke xviii. 31—34.*

<sup>32</sup> For he shall be delivered unto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked and spitefully intreated,

and spitted on :

<sup>33</sup> And they shall scourge him,

and put him to death : and the third day he shall rise again.

<sup>34</sup> And they understood none of these things : and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.

*Matt. xx. 20—28.*

sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left, in thy kingdom.

<sup>22</sup> But Jesus answered and said,

Ye know not what ye ask.

Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with ?

They say unto him,  
We are able.

<sup>23</sup> And he saith unto them,  
Ye shall indeed drink of my cup,  
and be baptized with the

*Mark x. 35—45.*

sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory.

<sup>38</sup> But Jesus said unto them,

Ye know not what ye ask :

Can ye drink of the cup that I drink of ? and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with ?

<sup>39</sup> And they say unto him,  
We can.

And Jesus said unto them,  
Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of,  
and with the baptism that I

*Matt. xx. 20—28.*

baptism that I am baptized with:

but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but *it shall be given to them* for whom it is prepared of my Father.

<sup>24</sup> And when the ten heard *it*, they were moved with indignation against the two brethren.

<sup>25</sup> But Jesus called them *unto him*, and said,

Ye know that the

princes of the Gentiles exer-

*Mark x. 35—45.*

am baptized withal shall ye be baptized:

<sup>40</sup> But to sit on my right hand and on my left hand is not mine to give; but *it shall be given to them* for whom it is prepared.

<sup>41</sup> And when the ten heard *it*, they began to be much displeased with James and John.

<sup>42</sup> But Jesus called them *to him*, and saith unto them,

Ye know that they which are accounted

to rule over the Gentiles exer-

*Matt. xx. 29—34.*

<sup>29</sup> And as they departed from Jericho,  
a great multitude followed him.

<sup>30</sup> And, behold, two\* blind men

sitting by the way side,

## SECTION XXVIII

*Mark x. 46—52.*

<sup>46</sup> And they came to Jericho;

and as he went out of Jericho with his disciples and a great number of people,

blind Bartimeus, the son of Timeus,  
sat by the highway side begging.

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 474, 475.



*Matt. xx. 20—28.*

cise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them.

<sup>26</sup> But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister;

<sup>27</sup> And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant:

<sup>28</sup> Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

*Mark x. 35—45.*

cise lordship over them; and their great ones exercise authority upon them.

<sup>43</sup> But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister:

<sup>44</sup> And whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all.

<sup>45</sup> For even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister and to give his life a ransom for many.

#### THE BLIND MEN AT JERICO

*Luke xviii. 35—43.*

<sup>35</sup> And it came to pass that as he was come nigh unto Jericho,

a certain blind man

sat by the way side begging:

*Matt. xx. 29—34.**Mark x. 46—52.*

when they heard that  
Jesus  
passed by,

cried out, saying,  
Have mercy on us,  
O Lord, *thou* Son of David,

<sup>31</sup> And the  
multitude  
rebuked them,  
because they should hold their  
peace :  
but they cried the more,

saying,  
Have mercy on us,  
O Lord, *thou* Son of David,  
<sup>32</sup> And Jesus stood still, and  
called them,

and said,  
What will ye that I shall  
do unto you ?

<sup>33</sup> They say unto him,  
Lord, that our eyes may be  
opened.

<sup>34</sup> So Jesus had compassion

<sup>47</sup> And when he heard that  
it was Jesus of Nazareth,

he began to cry out, and say,  
Jesus, *thou* Son of David,  
have mercy on me.

<sup>48</sup> And many  
charged him,  
that he should hold his  
peace :  
but he cried the more a great  
deal,

*Thou* Son of David,  
have mercy on me.

<sup>49</sup> And Jesus stood still, and  
commanded him to be called.

And they call the blind man,  
saying unto him, Be of good  
comfort, rise; he calleth thee.

<sup>50</sup> And he, casting away his  
garment, rose, and came to  
Jesus.

<sup>51</sup> And Jesus answered and  
said unto him,  
What wilt thou that I should  
do unto thee ?

The blind man said unto him,  
Lord, that I might receive my  
sight.

*Luke xviii. 35—43.*

<sup>36</sup> And hearing the multitude pass by, he asked what it meant.

<sup>37</sup> And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by.

<sup>38</sup> And he cried, saying,  
Jesus, *thou* Son of David,  
have mercy on me.

<sup>39</sup> And they which went before  
rebuked him,

that he should hold his  
peace:

but he cried so much the  
more,

*Thou* Son of David,  
have mercy on me.

<sup>40</sup> And Jesus stood, and  
commanded him to be brought  
unto him:

and when he was come near,  
he asked him,

<sup>41</sup> Saying,  
What wilt thou that I shall  
do unto thee?

And he said,  
Lord, that I may receive my  
sight.

*Matt. xx. 29—34.*

on *them*, and touched their eyes.

And immediately their eyes received sight, and they followed him.

*Mark x. 46—52.*

<sup>52</sup> And Jesus said unto him,  
Go thy way;  
thy faith hath made thee whole.

And immediately he received his sight, and followed Jesus in the way.

## SECTION XXIX

### THE HOUSE OF ZACCHEUS

*Luke xix. 1—10.*

<sup>1</sup> And *Jesus* entered and passed through Jericho. <sup>2</sup> And, behold, *there was a man* named Zaccheus, which was the chief among the publicans, and he was rich. <sup>3</sup> And he sought to see Jesus who he was; and could not for the press, because he was little of stature. <sup>4</sup> And he ran before, and climbed up into a sycamore tree to see him: for he was to pass that *way*. <sup>5</sup> And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up, and saw him, and

said unto him, Zaccheus, make haste, and come down; for to day I must abide at thy house. <sup>6</sup> And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully. <sup>7</sup> And when they saw *it*, they all murmured, saying, That he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner. <sup>8</sup> And Zaccheus stood, and said unto the Lord; Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation,

---

*Luke xviii. 35—43.*

<sup>42</sup>And Jesus said unto him,  
Receive thy sight;  
thy faith hath saved thee.

<sup>43</sup>And immediately he received his sight, and followed him,  
glorifying God: and all the people, when they saw *it*, gave praise unto God.

*Luke xix. 1—10.*

I restore *him* fourfold. <sup>9</sup>And of Abraham. <sup>10</sup>For the Son  
Jesus said unto him, This day of man is come to seek and to  
is salvation come to this house, save that which was lost.  
forsomuch as he also is a son

## SECTION XXX

## PARABLE OF THE POUNDS \*

*Luke* xix. 11—28.

<sup>11</sup> And as they heard these things, he added and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought that the kingdom of God should immediately appear. <sup>12</sup> He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. <sup>13</sup> And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come. <sup>14</sup> But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this *man* to reign over us. <sup>15</sup> And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded those servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading.

<sup>16</sup> Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds. <sup>17</sup> And he said unto him, Well, thou

good servant: because thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities. <sup>18</sup> And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds. <sup>19</sup> And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities. <sup>20</sup> And another came, saying, Lord, behold, *here is* thy pound, which I have kept laid up in a napkin: <sup>21</sup> for I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up that thou layedst not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow. <sup>22</sup> And he saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, *thou* wicked servant. Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow: <sup>23</sup> wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury? <sup>24</sup> And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and

\* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 481, 482.

---

*Luke* xix. 11—28.

give *it* to him that hath ten pounds. <sup>25</sup> (And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.) <sup>26</sup> For I say unto you, That unto every one which hath shall be given; and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away

from him. <sup>27</sup> But those mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay *them* before me.

<sup>28</sup> And when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending up to Jerusalem.



## PART X

### The Approach to Jerusalem

#### SECTION I

##### STATE OF FEELING IN THE CITY

*John xi. 55—57.*

AND the Jews' passover was nigh at hand: and many went out of the country up to Jerusalem before the passover, to purify themselves. <sup>56</sup>Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple, What think ye, that he will not come to the feast? <sup>57</sup>Now both the chief priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that, if any man knew where he were, he should show *it*, that they might take him.

#### SECTION II

*Matt. xxvi. 6, 7.*

<sup>6</sup> Now when Jesus was in Bethany\*, in the house of Simon the leper,

*Mark xiv. 3.*

<sup>3</sup> And being in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper,

\* See Holy Week, pp. 5—8.

THE SUPPER AT BETHANY

*John* xii. 1—3.

Then Jesus six days before the Passover came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead. <sup>2</sup> There they made him a supper; and Martha served: but Lazarus

*Matt. xxvi. 6, 7.*

<sup>7</sup> There came unto him  
a woman having an alabaster  
box of very precious ointment,  
and poured *it* on his  
head, as he sat *at meat*.

*Mark xiv. 3.*

as he sat at meat, there came  
a woman having an alabaster  
box of ointment of spikenard,  
very precious; and she brake  
the box, and poured *it* on his  
head.

## SECTION III

*Matt. xxvi. 8—13.*

<sup>8</sup> But when his disciples  
saw *it*, they had indignation,  
saying,

To what purpose *is* this  
waste?

<sup>9</sup> For this ointment might  
have been sold for much,

and given to the  
poor,

*Mark xiv. 4—9.*

<sup>4</sup> And there were some  
that had indignation within  
themselves, and said,

Why was this  
waste of the ointment made?

<sup>5</sup> For it might  
have been sold for more than  
three hundred pence,  
and have been given to the  
poor.

And they murmured against  
her.

*John* xii. 1—3.

was one of them that sat at the table with him.

<sup>3</sup> Then took Mary a pound of ointment of spike-nard, very costly,

and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.

THE REMARK OF JUDAS

*John* xii. 4—8.

Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, which should betray him,

<sup>5</sup> Why was not this ointment

sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?

<sup>6</sup> This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and had

*Matt.* xxvi. 8—13.*Mark* xiv. 4—9.

<sup>10</sup> When Jesus understood *it*,  
he said unto them,

Why trouble  
ye the woman? for she hath  
wrought a good work upon me.

<sup>11</sup> For ye have the poor  
always with you;

but me ye have not always.

For

in that she hath poured this  
ointment on my body,

she did *it* for my  
burial.

<sup>13</sup> Verily I say unto you,  
Wheresoever this gospel shall  
be preached in the  
whole world, *there* shall also  
this, that this woman hath  
done, be told for a memorial  
of her.

<sup>6</sup> And Jesus said,

Let her alone; why trouble  
ye her? she hath  
wrought a good work on me.

<sup>7</sup> For ye have the poor  
with you always, and whenso-  
ever ye will ye may do them  
good:

but me ye have not always.

<sup>8</sup> She hath done what she  
could:

she is come aforehand  
to anoint my body to the  
burying.

<sup>9</sup> Verily I say unto you,  
Wheresoever this gospel shall  
be preached throughout the  
whole world, *this* also  
that she hath  
done shall be spoken of for a  
memorial of her.

## SECTION IV

### THE MORNING OF PALM SUNDAY\*

*John* xii. 9—11.

<sup>9</sup> Much people of the Jews  
therefore knew that he was  
there: and they came not for

Jesus' sake only, but that they  
might see Lazarus also, whom  
he had raised from the dead.

\* See Holy Week, pp. 26—30.

*John* xii. 4—8.

the bag, and bare what was  
put therein.

<sup>7</sup> Then said Jesus,

Let her alone.

Against the day of my bury-  
ing hath she kept this.

<sup>8</sup> For the poor  
always ye have with you ;

but me ye have not always.

*John* xii. 9—11.

<sup>10</sup> But the chief priests con-  
sulted that they might put  
Lazarus also to death ; <sup>11</sup> be-  
cause that by reason of him  
many of the Jews went away  
and believed on Jesus.

## SECTION V

*Matt.* xxi. 1—7.*Mark* xi. 1—7.

<sup>1</sup>And when they drew nigh  
unto Jerusalem, and were  
come to Bethphage \*;

unto the mount  
of Olives, then sent Jesus  
two disciples,

<sup>2</sup>Saying unto them, Go  
into the village over  
against you, and straightway  
ye shall

find an ass tied, and a  
colt with her ;

loose *them* and bring *them*

unto me.

<sup>3</sup>And if any *man* say ought  
unto you,

<sup>1</sup>And when they came nigh  
to Jerusalem,  
unto Bethphage and Bethany,  
at the mount

of Olives, he sendeth forth  
two of his disciples,

<sup>2</sup>And saith unto them, Go  
your way into the village over  
against you : and as soon as  
ye be entered into it, ye shall  
find a

colt tied, whereon never  
man sat; loose him and bring  
*him*.

<sup>3</sup>And if any man say  
unto you,

ye shall say,  
The Lord hath need  
of them ; and straightway he  
will send them.

<sup>6</sup>And the disciples  
went,

Why do ye this ?  
say ye

that the Lord hath need  
of him ; and straightway he  
will send him hither.

<sup>4</sup>And they  
went their way, and found the  
colt tied by the door without  
in a place where two ways  
met;

\* See Holy Week, pp. 31—44.



## THE PROCESSION FROM BETHANY ON PALM SUNDAY

Luke xix. 29—35.

John xii. 12—16.

<sup>12</sup> On the next day

<sup>29</sup> And it came to pass,  
when he was come nigh

to Bethphage and Bethany,  
at the mount called *the mount*  
of Olives, he sent

two of his disciples,

<sup>30</sup> Saying, Go ye  
into the village  
over against *you*; in the which  
at your entering ye shall  
find a  
colt tied, whereon yet never  
man sat: loose him, and bring  
*him hither*.

<sup>31</sup> And if any man ask  
you,

much people that were come  
to the feast, when they heard  
that

Why do ye loose *him*?  
thus shall ye say unto him,  
Because the Lord hath need  
of him.

<sup>32</sup> And they that were sent  
went their way, and found

even as he had said unto

*Matt. xxi. 1—7.*

and did as Jesus commanded them,

<sup>7</sup> And brought the ass, and the colt, and put on them their clothes,

and they set *him* thereon.

<sup>4</sup> All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying,

<sup>5</sup> Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass.

*Mark xi. 1—7.*

and they loose him.

<sup>5</sup> And certain of them that stood there said unto them, What do ye, loosing the colt?

<sup>6</sup> And they said unto them even as Jesus had commanded: and

they let them go.

<sup>7</sup> And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their garments on him;

and he sat upon him.

*Luke* xix. 29—35.

*John* xii. 12—16.

them.

<sup>33</sup>And as they were loosing  
the colt,

the owners  
thereof said unto them,

Why loose ye the colt?

<sup>34</sup>And they said,

The Lord hath need of him.

Jesus was coming to  
Jerusalem,

<sup>13</sup>Took branches of palm-  
trees, and went forth to meet  
him.

<sup>35</sup>And they brought him to  
Jesus: and they cast their  
garments upon the colt,

<sup>14</sup>And Jesus, when he had  
found a young ass,

and they set Jesus thereon.

sat thereon;

as it is written,

<sup>15</sup>Fear not, daughter of  
Sion: Behold, thy King  
cometh, sitting

on an ass's colt.

<sup>16</sup>These things understood  
not his disciples at the first:  
but when Jesus was glorified,  
then remembered they that  
these things were written of  
him, and *that* they had done  
these things unto him.

## SECTION VI

*Matt. xxi. 8, 9.*

<sup>8</sup>And a very  
great multitude  
spread their garments in the  
way;  
others cut down branches  
from the trees, and strawed  
*them* in the way.

*Mark xi. 8—10.*

<sup>8</sup>And many  
spread their garments in the  
way:  
and others cut down branches  
off the trees, and strawed  
*them* in the way.

<sup>9</sup>And the multitudes that  
went before, and  
that followed,

<sup>9</sup>And they that  
went before, and  
they  
that followed,

cried, saying,  
Hosanna  
to the Son of David:  
Blessed *is*  
he  
that cometh in the name of  
the Lord;

cried, saying,  
Hosanna  
Blessed *is*  
he  
that cometh in the name of  
the Lord:

Hosanna in the highest.

<sup>10</sup>Blessed *be* the kingdom of  
our father David, that cometh  
in the name of the Lord:

Hosanna in the highest.

## THE DESCENT OF THE MOUNT OF OLIVES

*Luke* xix. 36—40.*John* xii. 13. 17—19.<sup>36</sup> And as he went, they

spread their clothes in the  
way.

<sup>37</sup> And when he was come  
nigh, even now at the descent  
of the mount of Olives,

the whole multitude  
of the disciples

began to rejoice and praise  
God with a loud voice for all  
the mighty works that they  
had seen ;

<sup>38</sup> Saying,

Hosanna,

Blessed be  
the King  
that cometh in the name of  
the Lord :

peace in heaven, and glory  
in the highest.

<sup>13</sup> And cried,

Blessed is the  
King of Israel  
that cometh in the name of  
the Lord.

<sup>17</sup> The people therefore that

## SECTION VII

## CHRIST WEeping OVER JERUSALEM

*Luke xix. 41—44.*

<sup>41</sup>And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it, <sup>42</sup>saying, If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things *which belong* unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes. <sup>43</sup>For the days shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a

*Luke* xix. 36—40.

<sup>39</sup>And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples. <sup>40</sup>And he answered and said unto them, I tell you that, if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out.

*John* xii. 13. 17—19.

was with him, when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record. <sup>18</sup>For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

<sup>19</sup>The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? behold, the world is gone after him.

*Luke* xix. 41—44.

trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side, <sup>44</sup>and shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee;

and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another; because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.



## SECTION VIII

## CHRIST ENTERING JERUSALEM

*Matt.* xxi. 10, 11. 14—17.

<sup>10</sup> And when he was come into Jerusalem,

all the city was moved, saying, Who is this? <sup>11</sup> And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

<sup>14</sup> And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple; and he healed them.

<sup>15</sup> And when the chief priests and scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Son of David; they were sore displeased, <sup>16</sup> and said unto him, Hearest thou what these say? And Jesus saith unto them, Yea; have ye never read, Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?

<sup>17</sup> And he left them, and went out of the city into Bethany. And he lodged there.

*Mark* xi. 11.

<sup>11</sup> And Jesus entered into Jerusalem, and into the temple.

And when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the eventide was come, he went out into Bethany with the twelve.

## SECTION IX

## THE GREEKS BROUGHT TO CHRIST \*

*John* xii. 20—36.

<sup>20</sup> And there were certain Greeks among them that came up to worship at the feast: <sup>21</sup> the same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus. <sup>22</sup> Philip cometh and telleth Andrew: and again Andrew and Philip tell Jesus.

<sup>23</sup> And Jesus answered them, saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified. <sup>24</sup> Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit. <sup>25</sup> He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal.

<sup>26</sup> If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will *my* Father honour. <sup>27</sup> Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour: but for this

cause came I unto this hour.

<sup>28</sup> Father, glorify thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven, *saying*, I have both glorified *it*, and will glorify *it* again.

<sup>29</sup> The people therefore, that stood by, and heard *it*, said that it thundered: others said, An angel spake to him. <sup>30</sup> Jesus answered and said, This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes. <sup>31</sup> Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out. <sup>32</sup> And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all *men* unto me. <sup>33</sup> This he said, signifying what death he should die.

<sup>34</sup> The people answered him, We have heard out of the law that Christ abideth for ever: and how sayest thou, The Son of man must be lifted up? who is this Son of man? <sup>35</sup> Then Jesus said unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you. Walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon

\* See Holy Week, p. 62.

*John* xii. 20—36.

you: for he that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth. <sup>36</sup> While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light. These things spake Jesus, and departed, and did hide himself from them.

## SECTION X

### UNBELIEF OF THE JEWS

*John* xii. 37—50.

<sup>37</sup> But though he had done so many miracles before them, yet they believed not on him: <sup>38</sup> that the saying of Esaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake, Lord, who hath believed our report? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed? <sup>39</sup> Therefore they could not believe, because that Esaias said again, <sup>40</sup> He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart; that they should not see with *their* eyes, nor understand with *their* heart, and be converted, and I should heal them. <sup>41</sup> These things said Esaias, when he saw his glory, and spake of him.

<sup>42</sup> Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess *him*, lest they should be put out of the synagogue:

<sup>43</sup> for they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God.

<sup>44</sup> Jesus cried and said, He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me. <sup>45</sup> And he that seeth me, seeth him that sent me. <sup>46</sup> I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me should not abide in darkness. <sup>47</sup> And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. <sup>48</sup> He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day. <sup>49</sup> For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say,

*John* xii. 37—50.

and what I should speak. whatsoever I speak therefore,  
<sup>50</sup> And I know that his com- even as the Father said unto  
 mandment is life everlasting: me, so I speak.

## SECTION XI

### THE CURSING OF THE FIG TREE

*Matt.* xxi. 18, 19.

<sup>18</sup> Now in the morning as  
 he returned  
 into the city, he hungered.

<sup>19</sup> And when he saw a fig  
 tree in the way,

he came to it,

and found  
 nothing thereon, but leaves  
 only,

and said unto it, Let no  
 fruit grow on thee hence-  
 forward for ever.

*Mark* xi. 12—14.

<sup>12</sup> And on the morrow, when  
 they were come from Bethany,  
 he was hungry :

<sup>13</sup> And seeing a fig  
 tree

afar off having leaves,  
 he came, if haply he might  
 find any thing thereon : and  
 when he came to it, he found  
 nothing but leaves ; for the  
 time of figs was not *yet*.

<sup>14</sup> And Jesus answered  
 and said unto it, No man  
 eat fruit of thee hereafter  
 for ever.

And his disciples heard it

## SECTION XII

*Matt.* xxi. 12, 13.

<sup>12</sup> And Jesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves,

<sup>13</sup> And said unto them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves.

*Mark* xi. 15—19.

<sup>15</sup> And they come to Jerusalem :

And Jesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves ;

<sup>16</sup> And would not suffer that any man should carry *any* vessel through the temple.

<sup>17</sup> And he taught, saying unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but ye have made it a den of thieves.

<sup>18</sup> And the scribes and chief priests heard *it*, and sought how they might destroy him:

for they feared him, because all the people was

astonished at his doctrine.

<sup>19</sup> And when even was come, he went out of the city.

---

THE BUYERS AND SELLERS IN THE TEMPLE

*Luke* xix. 45—48.

<sup>45</sup> And he went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold therein, and them that bought;

<sup>46</sup> Saying  
unto them, It is written,  
My house is  
the house of prayer;  
but ye have made it a den of  
thieves.

<sup>47</sup> And he taught daily in the temple.

But the  
chief priests and the scribes  
and the chief of the people,  
sought to  
destroy him,

<sup>48</sup> And could not find what  
they might do:

for all the people were  
very attentive to hear him.

## SECTION XIII

## THE RETURN TO THE TEMPLE

*Matt. xxi. 19—22.*

the  
<sup>19</sup> And presently  
 fig tree withered away.

<sup>20</sup> And when the disciples  
 saw *it*, they marvelled, say-  
 ing, How soon is the fig tree  
 withered away!

<sup>21</sup> Jesus answered and said  
 unto them,

Verily I say unto you,  
 If ye have faith, and doubt not,  
 ye shall not only do this *which*  
*is done* to the fig tree, but also  
 if ye shall say unto this  
 mountain, Be thou removed,  
 and be thou cast into the sea;

it shall be done.

<sup>22</sup> And  
 all things, whatsoever ye shall  
 ask in prayer, believing, ye

*Mark xi. 20—26.*

<sup>20</sup> And in the morning, as  
 they passed by, they saw the  
 fig tree dried up from the  
 roots.

<sup>21</sup> And Peter calling to re-  
 membrance, saith unto him,  
 Master, behold, the fig tree  
 which thou cursedst is with-  
 ered away.

<sup>22</sup> And Jesus answering saith  
 unto them, Have faith in God.

<sup>23</sup> For verily I say unto you,

That  
 whosoever shall say unto this  
 mountain, Be thou removed,  
 and be thou cast into the sea;  
 and shall not doubt  
 in his heart, but shall believe  
 that those things which he  
 saith shall come to pass;  
 he shall have whatsoever he  
 saith.

<sup>24</sup> Therefore I say unto you,  
 What things soever ye desire,  
 when ye pray, believe that ye



*Matt.* xxi. 19—22.  
shall receive.

*Mark* xi. 20—26.  
receive *them*, and ye shall  
have *them*.

<sup>25</sup> And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses.  
<sup>26</sup> But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

# PART XI

## The Teaching in the Temple

### SECTION I

*Matt. xxi. 23—27.*

*Mark xi. 27—33.*

<sup>27</sup>And they come again to  
Jerusalem :

AND

and

when he was come

as

into the temple,

he was walking

in the temple,

the chief priests

there come to him  
the chief priests and the  
scribes

and the elders  
of the people came unto him  
as he was teaching, and said,  
By what authority  
doest thou these things? and  
who gave thee this

and the elders,

authority?

<sup>28</sup>And say unto him,  
By what authority  
doest thou these things? and  
who gave thee this  
authority to do these things?

<sup>24</sup>And Jesus answered and  
said unto them, I also will

<sup>29</sup>And Jesus answered and  
said unto them, I will also

THE QUESTION OF AUTHORITY \*

*Luke* xx. 1—8.

<sup>1</sup> And it came to pass, *that*  
on one of those days,

as he taught the people

in the temple, and preached  
the gospel,

the chief priests and the  
scribes came upon *him*, with  
the elders,

<sup>2</sup> And spake unto him, saying,  
Tell us by what authority  
doest thou these things? or  
who is he that gave thee this  
authority?

<sup>3</sup> And he answered and  
said unto them, I will also

\* See Holy Week, pp. 112—115.

*Matt. xxi. 23—27.*

ask you one thing, which if ye tell me,

I in like wise will tell you by what authority I do these things.

<sup>25</sup> The baptism of John, whence was it ? from heaven, or of men ?

And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven ; he will say unto us,

Why did ye not then believe him ?

<sup>26</sup> But if we shall say, Of men ; we fear the people ;

for all hold John as a prophet.

<sup>27</sup> And they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell.

And he said unto them,

Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

*Mark xi. 27—33.*

ask of you one question, and answer me,

and I will tell you by what authority I do these things.

<sup>30</sup> The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of men ? answer me.

<sup>31</sup> And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven ; he will say,

Why then did ye not believe him ?

<sup>32</sup> But if we shall say, Of men ; they feared the people :

for all *men* counted John, that he was a prophet indeed.

<sup>33</sup> And they answered and said unto Jesus, We cannot tell.

And Jesus answering, saith unto them,

Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

## SECTION II

### THE PARABLE OF THE TWO SONS

*Matt. xxi. 28—32.*

<sup>28</sup> But what think ye ? A *certain* man had two sons ; and he came to the first, and

said, Son, go work to-day in my vineyard. <sup>29</sup> He answered and said, I will not : but after-

*Luke xx. 1—8.*

ask you one thing; and answer me:

<sup>4</sup> The baptism of John,  
was it  
from heaven, or of men?

<sup>5</sup> And they reasoned with  
themselves, saying, If we shall  
say, From heaven; he will say,

Why then believed  
ye him not?

<sup>6</sup> But and if we say, Of  
men;  
all the people will stone us:  
for they be persuaded that  
John was a prophet.

<sup>7</sup> And they answered, That  
they could not tell  
whence *it was*.

<sup>8</sup> And Jesus said  
unto them,

Neither tell I you by what  
authority I do these things.

*Matt. xxi. 28—32.*

ward he repented, and went.  
<sup>30</sup> And he came to the second,  
and said likewise. And he  
answered and said, I *go*, sir:  
and went not. <sup>31</sup> Whether of  
them twain did the will of *his*

*Matt. xxi. 28—32.*

father? They say unto him,  
The first. Jesus saith unto  
them, Verily I say unto you,  
That the publicans and the

harlots go into the kingdom of  
God before you. <sup>32</sup> For John  
came unto you in the way of  
righteousness, and ye believed

### SECTION III

*Matt. xxi. 33—41.*

<sup>33</sup> Hear another parable:

There was a certain house-  
holder which planted a vine-  
yard,

and hedged  
it round about,

and digged a  
winepress in it, and built a  
tower,

and let it out to husbandmen,  
and went into a far country:

<sup>34</sup> And when the time of the  
fruit drew near,

he sent his  
servants to the husbandmen,  
that they might receive

the fruits of it.

<sup>35</sup> And the husbandmen took  
his servants, and  
beat one,  
and killed another,

*Mark xii. 1—9.*

<sup>1</sup> And he began to speak  
unto them by parables.

A certain man  
planted a vineyard,

and set an hedge  
about it,

and digged a place for the  
winefat, and built a  
tower,

and let it out to husbandmen,  
and went into a far country:

<sup>2</sup> And at the season

he sent to  
the husbandmen a servant,  
that he might receive from  
the husbandmen  
of the fruit of the vineyard.

<sup>3</sup> And they caught  
him, and  
beat him,  
and sent him away empty.

<sup>4</sup> And again he sent unto  
and them

*Matt.* xxi. 28—32.

him not: but the publicans  
and the harlots believed him:  
and ye, when ye had seen *it*,

*THE PARABLE OF THE VINEYARD*

*Luke* xx. 9—16.

<sup>9</sup> Then began he to speak to the people this parable;

A certain man  
planted a vineyard,

and let it forth to husbandmen,  
and went into a far country  
for a long time.

<sup>10</sup> And at the season

he sent  
a servant to the husbandmen,  
that they should give him

of the fruit of the vineyard:  
but the husbandmen

beat him,  
and sent *him* away empty.

<sup>11</sup> And again he sent

another servant: and they



*Matt.* xxi. 33.—41.

stoned another.

<sup>36</sup> Again, he sent other servants more than the first: and they did unto them likewise.

<sup>37</sup> But last of all

he sent  
unto them his son, saying,

'They will reverence my son.

<sup>38</sup> But when  
the husbandmen saw the son,  
they said  
among themselves,

This is the heir,  
come, let us kill him,  
and let us seize on his inheritance.

<sup>39</sup> And they caught him, and  
cast *him* out of  
the vineyard,  
and slew *him*.

<sup>40</sup> When the lord therefore  
of the vineyard cometh,  
what will  
he do  
unto those husbandmen?

*Mark* xii. 1—9.

another servant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded *him* in the head, and sent *him* away shamefully handled.

<sup>5</sup> And again he sent another; and him they killed,

and many others; beating some, and killing some.

<sup>6</sup> Having yet therefore one son, his well-beloved,

he sent him  
also last unto them, saying,

They will reverence my son.

<sup>7</sup> But  
those husbandmen  
said  
among themselves,

This is the heir;  
come, let us kill him,  
and the inheritance shall be  
our's.

<sup>8</sup> And they took him, and  
killed *him*, and cast *him* out  
of the vineyard.

<sup>9</sup> What shall  
therefore the lord of the vine-  
yard do?

*Luke* xx. 9—16.

beat him also, and entreated  
*him* shamefully,

and sent *him* away empty.

<sup>12</sup>And again he sent a third :  
and they wounded him also,  
and cast *him* out.

<sup>13</sup>Then said the lord of the  
vineyard, What shall I do ?

I will send  
my beloved son :

it may be  
they will reverence *him*,  
when they see him.

<sup>14</sup>But when  
the husbandmen saw him,  
they reasoned  
among themselves,

saying,  
This is the heir ;  
come, let us kill him,  
that the inheritance may be  
our's.

<sup>15</sup>So they  
cast him out of  
the vineyard,  
and killed *him*.

What there-  
fore shall the lord of the  
vineyard do unto them ?

*Matt. xxi. 33—41.*

<sup>41</sup> They say unto him\*,  
He will miserably destroy  
those wicked men, and will  
let out *his* vineyard unto other  
husbandmen, which shall ren-  
der him the fruits in their  
seasons.

*Mark xii. 1—9.*

He will come and destroy  
the husbandmen, and will  
give the vineyard unto others.

#### SECTION IV

*Matt. xxi. 42—46.*

<sup>42</sup> Jesus  
saith unto them,

*Mark xii. 10—12.*

Did ye never read in the  
Scriptures,

The stone which the builders  
rejected, the same is become  
the head of the corner :

This is the Lord's doing,  
and it is marvellous in our  
eyes ?

<sup>43</sup> Therefore say I unto you,  
The kingdom of God shall be  
taken from you, and given to  
a nation bringing forth the  
fruits thereof.

<sup>44</sup> And whosoever shall fall  
on this stone shall be broken :  
but on whomsoever it shall  
fall, it will grind him to  
powder.

<sup>10</sup> And have ye not read this  
Scripture ;

The stone which the builders  
rejected, is become  
the head of the corner :

<sup>41</sup> This was the Lord's doing,  
and it is marvellous in our  
eyes ?

\* See Holy Week, pp. 143—145.

---

*Luke* xx. 9—16.

<sup>16</sup> He shall come and destroy these husbandmen, and shall give the vineyard to others.

And when they heard *it*, they said, God forbid.

*THE STONE REJECTED OF THE BUILDERS*

*Luke* xx. 17—19.

<sup>17</sup> And he beheld them, and said,

What is this then that is written,

The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner?

<sup>18</sup> Whosoever shall fall upon that stone shall be broken; but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

*Matt.* xxi. 42—46.

<sup>45</sup> And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them.

<sup>46</sup> But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude,

because they took him for a prophet.

*Mark* xii. 10—12.

<sup>12</sup> And they sought to lay hands on him, but feared the people:

for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them: and they left him and went their way.

## SECTION V

### PARABLE OF THE MARRIAGE FEAST \*

*Matt.* xxii. 1—14.

<sup>1</sup> And Jesus answered, and spake unto them again by parables, and said, <sup>2</sup> The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son, <sup>3</sup> and sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come. <sup>4</sup> Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come

unto the marriage. <sup>5</sup> But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise: <sup>6</sup> and the remnant took his servants, and entreated them spitefully, and slew them. <sup>7</sup> But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth; and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burnt up their city. <sup>8</sup> Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy. <sup>9</sup> Go

\* See Holy Week, pp. 154—159.

*Luke xx. 17—19.*

<sup>19</sup>And the chief priests and the scribes the same hour sought to lay hands on him, and they feared the people: for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them.

*Matt. xxii. 1—14.*

ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage.

<sup>10</sup>So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all, as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests.

<sup>11</sup>And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on

a wedding garment: <sup>12</sup>and he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless. <sup>13</sup>Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast *him* into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. <sup>14</sup>For many are called, but few *are* chosen.

## SECTION VI

*Matt. xxii. 15—22.*

<sup>15</sup> Then went the Pharisees,  
and took counsel how they  
might entangle him in *his* talk.

<sup>16</sup> And they sent out unto  
him their disciples with  
the Herodians,

saying,  
Master, we know that thou  
art true, and teachest the way  
of God in truth, neither carest  
thou for any *man*: for thou  
regardest not the person of  
men.

<sup>17</sup> Tell us therefore, What  
thinkest thou? Is it lawful to  
give tribute unto Cesar,  
or not?

<sup>18</sup> But Jesus perceived  
their wickedness, and said,  
Why tempt ye me, *ye* hypo-  
crites?

<sup>19</sup> Shew me the tribute  
money.

And they

*Mark xii. 13—17.*

<sup>13</sup> And they send unto  
him certain of the Pharisees  
and of the Herodians,

to catch him in  
*his* words.

<sup>14</sup> And when they were  
come, they say unto him,  
Master, we know that thou  
art true,

and carest for no  
man: for thou regardest not  
the person of men, but teach-  
est the way of God in truth:

Is it lawful to  
give tribute to Cesar,  
or not?

<sup>15</sup> Shall we give, or shall we  
not give? But he, knowing  
their hypocrisy, said unto  
them, Why tempt ye me?

bring me a penny, that I may  
see *it*.

<sup>16</sup> And they



## THE QUESTION OF TRIBUTE

*Luke xx. 20—26.*

<sup>20</sup> And they watched *him*,  
and sent forth

spies, which should feign themselves just men,  
that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governor.

<sup>21</sup> And  
they asked him, saying,  
Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly,

neither acceptest thou the person *of any*, but teachest the way of God truly :

<sup>22</sup> Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Cesar or no ?

<sup>23</sup> But he perceived their craftiness, and said unto them, Why tempt ye me ?

<sup>24</sup> Shew me a penny.

*Matt. xxii. 15—22.*

brought unto him a penny.

<sup>20</sup> And he saith unto them,  
Whose *is* this image and  
superscription ?

<sup>21</sup> They say unto him,  
Cesar's.

Then saith he unto them,  
Render therefore unto Cesar  
the things which are Cesar's;  
and unto God the things that  
are God's.

<sup>22</sup> When they had heard  
*these words,*

they marvelled,

and left him, and went their  
way.

*Matt. xxii. 23—32.*

<sup>23</sup> The same day came to  
him the Sadducees,  
which say that there is no  
resurrection, and asked  
him,

<sup>24</sup> Saying,  
Master, Moses said,  
If a man die,

having no children,

*Mark xii. 13—17.*

brought *it*.

And he saith unto them,  
Whose *is* this image and  
superscription ?

and they said unto him,  
Cesar's.

<sup>17</sup> And Jesus answering,  
said unto them,

Render to Cesar  
the things that are Cesar's,  
and to God the things that  
are God's.

And they marvelled  
at him.

## SECTION VII

*Mark xii. 18—27.*

<sup>18</sup> Then come unto  
him the Sadducees,  
which say there is no  
resurrection ; and they asked  
him,

saying,  
<sup>19</sup> Master, Moses wrote untous,  
If a man's brother die,

and leave *his* wife *behind* him,  
and leave no children,

*Luke xx. 20—26.*

Whose image and  
superscription hath it?

They answered and said,  
Cesar's.

<sup>25</sup> And he said unto them,  
Render therefore unto Cesar  
the things which be Cesar's;  
and unto God the things which  
be God's.

<sup>26</sup> And they could not take  
hold of his words before the  
people: and they marvelled  
at his answer, and held their  
peace.

THE QUESTION OF THE SADDUCEES

*Luke xx. 27—40.*

<sup>27</sup> Then came to *him*  
certain of the Sadducees  
which deny that there is any  
resurrection; and they asked  
him,

<sup>28</sup> Saying,  
Master, Moses wrote unto us,  
If any man's brother die,  
having a wife,

and he die without children,

*Matt.* xxii. 23—32.

his brother shall marry  
his wife, and raise up seed  
unto his brother.

<sup>25</sup> Now there were with us  
seven brethren: and the first  
when he had married a wife,  
deceased, and, having no issue,  
left his wife unto his brother.

<sup>26</sup> Likewise the second also,

and the third,

unto the seventh.

<sup>27</sup> And last of all the woman  
died also.

<sup>28</sup> Therefore in the resurrec-  
tion  
whose wife shall she be of  
the seven? for they all had  
her.

<sup>29</sup> Jesus answered and said  
unto them,

Ye do err,  
not knowing the scriptures,  
nor the power of God.

<sup>30</sup> For in the resurrec-  
tion they neither  
marry, nor are given in mar-  
riage,

*Mark* xii. 18—27.

that his brother should take  
his wife, and raise up seed  
unto his brother.

<sup>20</sup> Now there were  
seven brethren: and the first  
took a wife,  
and dying left no seed.

<sup>21</sup> And the second took her,  
and died,  
neither left he any seed:  
and the third  
likewise.

<sup>22</sup> And the seven had her,  
and left no seed:

last of all the woman  
died also.

<sup>23</sup> In the resurrection there-  
fore, when they shall rise,  
whose wife shall she be of  
them? for the seven had  
her to wife.

<sup>24</sup> And Jesus answering said  
unto them,

Do ye not therefore err,  
because ye know not the scrip-  
tures, neither the power of  
God?

<sup>25</sup> For when they shall rise  
from the dead, they neither  
marry, nor are given in mar-  
riage:

*Luke* xx. 27—40.

that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

<sup>29</sup> There were therefore seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and died without children.

<sup>30</sup> And the second took her to wife, and he died childless.

<sup>31</sup> And the third took her;

and in like manner the seven also. And they left no children, and died.

<sup>32</sup> Last of all the woman died also.

<sup>33</sup> Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife of them is she? for seven had her to wife.

<sup>34</sup> And Jesus answering said unto them,

The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage: <sup>35</sup> but they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage:

*Matt.* *xxii.* 23—32.*Mark* *xii.* 18—27.

but are as  
the angels of God  
in heaven.

but are as  
the angels  
which are in heaven.

<sup>31</sup> But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read

that which was  
spoken unto you by God,  
saying,

<sup>32</sup> I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?

God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.

<sup>26</sup> And as touching the dead, that they rise: have ye not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush

God spake unto him,  
saying,

*I am* the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?

<sup>27</sup> He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living:

ye therefore do greatly err.

*Luke xx. 27—40.*

<sup>36</sup> Neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the angels;

and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.

<sup>37</sup> Now that the dead are raised,

even Moses shewed at the bush,

when he calleth the Lord  
the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.

<sup>38</sup> For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living:  
for all live unto him.

<sup>39</sup> Then certain of the scribes answering said, Master, thou hast well said. <sup>40</sup> And after that, they durst not ask Him any *question at all*\*.

\* See Holy Week, p. 195.



## SECTION VIII

## THE FIRST AND GREAT COMMANDMENT

*Matt.* xxii. 33—40.

<sup>33</sup> And when the multitude heard *this*, they were astonished at his doctrine. <sup>34</sup> But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together.

<sup>35</sup> Then one of them, *which was a lawyer,*

asked *him a question*, tempting him, and saying,

<sup>36</sup> Master, *which is the great commandment in the law?*

<sup>37</sup> Jesus said unto him,

Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.

<sup>38</sup> This is the first and great commandment.

<sup>39</sup> And the second *is* like unto it, Thou shalt love

*Mark* xii. 28—34.

<sup>28</sup> And one of the scribes

came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him,

Which is the first commandment of all?

<sup>29</sup> And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments *is*, Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord:

<sup>30</sup> And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength.

This *is* the first commandment.

<sup>31</sup> And the second *is* like, *namely* this, Thou shalt love

*Matt.* xxii. 33—40.

thy neighbour as thyself.

<sup>40</sup> On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

*Mark* xii. 28—34.

thy neighbour as thyself.

There is none other commandment greater than these.

<sup>32</sup> And the scribe said unto him, Well, Master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God; and there is none other but he: <sup>33</sup> and to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love *his* neighbour as himself, is more than all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices. <sup>34</sup> And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God.

## SECTION IX

*Matt. xxii. 41—46.*

<sup>41</sup> While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them, <sup>42</sup> Saying, What think ye of Christ? whose son is he? They say unto him, *The son of David.*

<sup>43</sup> He saith unto them,

How then doth  
David  
in spirit

call him Lord, saying,

<sup>44</sup> The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

till I make thine enemies thy footstool?

<sup>45</sup> If David then call him Lord, how is he his son?

<sup>46</sup> And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any *man* from that day forth ask him any more *questions*.

*Mark xii. 34—37.*

<sup>34</sup> And no man after that durst ask him *any question*.

<sup>35</sup> And Jesus answered and said, while he taught in the temple, How say the scribes that Christ is the son of David?

<sup>36</sup> For David himself said by the Holy Ghost,

The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

<sup>37</sup> David therefore himself calleth him Lord; and whence is he *then* his son?

And the common people heard him gladly.

OUR LORD'S QUESTION OF THE SON OF DAVID

*Luke* xx. 41—44.

<sup>41</sup> And he  
said unto them,

How say they that Christ  
is David's son?

<sup>42</sup> And David himself saith  
in the book of Psalms,

The Lord said unto my  
Lord, Sit thou on my right  
hand,

<sup>43</sup> Till I make thine enemies  
thy footstool.

<sup>44</sup> David  
therefore  
calleth him Lord,  
how is he  
then his son?

## SECTION X

*Matt. xxiii. 1—12.*

<sup>1</sup>Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,

<sup>2</sup>Saying, The Scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat: <sup>3</sup>all therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, *that* observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not. <sup>4</sup>For they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay *them* on men's shoulders; but they *themselves* will not move them with one of their fingers.

<sup>5</sup>But all their works they do for to be seen of men: they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments,

<sup>6</sup>And love

the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues,

<sup>7</sup>And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi. <sup>8</sup>But be not ye

*Mark xii. 38, 39.*

<sup>38</sup>And he said unto them in his doctrine,

Beware of the scribes,

which love to go in long clothing,

and *love* salutations in the market-places:

<sup>39</sup>And the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues.

CAUTION AGAINST THE PHARISEES \*

*Luke xx. 45, 46.*

<sup>45</sup> Then in the audience of  
all the people, he said unto  
his disciples,

<sup>46</sup> Beware of the scribes,

which desire to walk in long  
robes,

and love greetings in the  
markets ;

and the chief  
rooms at feasts, and the highest  
seats in the synagogues.

\* See Holy Week, pp. 211, 212.

*Matt. xxiii. 1—12.*

called Rabbi: for one is your Master; *even* Christ; and all ye are brethren. <sup>9</sup> And call no *man* your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. <sup>10</sup> Neither be ye called masters: for one

is your Master, *even* Christ.

<sup>11</sup> But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant.

<sup>12</sup> And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased; and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted.

## SECTION XI

*Matt. xxiii. 13—39.*

<sup>13</sup> But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in *yourselves*, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in.

<sup>14</sup> Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation.

<sup>15</sup> Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he is made, ye make him two-fold more the child of hell than yourselves.

<sup>16</sup> Woe unto you, *ye* blind guides! which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the

*Mark xii. 40.*

<sup>40</sup> Which devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: these shall receive greater damnation.



*THE WOES DENOUNCED IN THE TEMPLE**Luke xx. 47*

<sup>47</sup> Which  
devour widows' houses, and  
for a shew make long  
prayers: the same shall re-  
ceive greater damnation.

*Matt.* xxiii. 13—39.

temple, he is a debtor. <sup>17</sup> *Ye* fools, and blind : for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold? <sup>18</sup> And, Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing ; but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty. <sup>19</sup> *Ye* fools, and blind : for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?

<sup>20</sup> Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

<sup>21</sup> And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein. <sup>22</sup> And he that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.

<sup>23</sup> Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye pay tithe of mint, and anise, and cummin, and have omitted the weightier *matters* of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith : these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. <sup>24</sup> *Ye* blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel.

<sup>25</sup> Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye make clean the outside of the cup, and of the platter, but

*Matt. xxiii. 13—39.*

within they are full of extortion and excess. <sup>26</sup> *Thou* blind Pharisee, cleanse first that *which is* within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.

<sup>27</sup> Woe, unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead *men's* bones, and of all uncleanness.

<sup>28</sup> Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.

<sup>29</sup> Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous, <sup>30</sup> and say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. <sup>31</sup> Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets. <sup>32</sup> Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.

<sup>33</sup> *Ye* serpents, *ye* generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?

<sup>34</sup> Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise

*Matt. xxiii. 13—39.*

men, and scribes : and *some* of them ye shall kill and crucify ; and *some* of them shall yescourge in your synagogues, and persecute *them* from city to city : <sup>35</sup> that upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel, unto the blood of Zacharias, son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar. <sup>36</sup> Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation. <sup>37</sup> O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, *thou* that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under *her* wings, and ye would not ! <sup>38</sup> Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. <sup>39</sup> For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

## SECTION XII

## THE WIDOW AT THE TREASURY \*

*Mark* xii. 41—44.

<sup>41</sup>And Jesus sat over against the treasury :

and beheld how the people cast money into the treasury : and many that were rich cast in much.

<sup>42</sup>And there came a certain poor widow, and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing.

<sup>43</sup>And he called *unto him* his disciples, and saith unto them,

Verily

I say unto you,  
That this poor widow hath cast more in than all they which have cast into the treasury :

<sup>44</sup>For all *they* did cast in of their abundance :

but she of her want did cast in all that she had, *even* all her living.

*Luke* xxi. 1—4.

<sup>1</sup>And he looked up, and saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasury.

<sup>2</sup>And he saw also a certain poor widow casting in thither two mites.

<sup>3</sup>And he said,

Of a truth

I say unto you,  
that this poor widow hath cast in more than they all :

<sup>4</sup>For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God : but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had.

\* See Holy Week, p. 236.

## PART XII

### The Discourse on the Mount of Olives

#### SECTION I

*Matt. xxiv. 1—3.*

AND Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to *him*

for to shew him the buildings of the temple.

<sup>2</sup>And Jesus said unto them,

See ye not all these things?

Verily I say unto you,

there shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

<sup>3</sup>And as he sat upon the mount of Olives,

the disciples

came unto him privately,

*Mark xiii. 1—4.*

<sup>1</sup>And as he went out of the temple\*, one of his disciples saith unto him,

Master, see what manner of stones, and what buildings *are here!*

<sup>2</sup>And Jesus answering, said unto him,

Seest thou these great buildings?

there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

<sup>3</sup>And as he sat upon the mount of Olives over against the temple, Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew, asked him privately,

\* See Holy Week, p. 241.

INQUIRY OF THE DISCIPLES

*Luke xxi. 5—7*

<sup>5</sup> And as some spake of the  
temple

how it was adorned with good-  
ly stones and gifts,

he said,  
<sup>6</sup> *As for* these things which  
ye behold,

the days will come in the which  
there shall not be left one  
stone upon another, that shall  
not be thrown down.

<sup>7</sup> And they  
asked him,

*Matt. xxiv. 1—3.*

saying,

Tell us, when shall these things be? and what *shall be* the sign

of thy coming, and of the end of the world?

*Mark xiii. 1—4.*

<sup>4</sup>Tell us, when shall these things be? and what *shall be* the sign when all these things shall be fulfilled?

## SECTION II

*Matt. xxiv. 4—8.*

<sup>4</sup>And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you.

<sup>5</sup>For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.

<sup>6</sup>And ye shall hear of wars,

and rumours of wars :  
   see that ye  
 be not troubled : for all *these things* must come to pass, but the end is not yet.

<sup>7</sup>For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom :

and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes in divers places.

*Mark xiii. 5—8.*

<sup>5</sup>And Jesus answering them began to say, Take heed lest any *man* deceive you :

<sup>6</sup>For many shall come in my name, saying, I am *Christ*; and shall deceive many.

<sup>7</sup>And when ye shall hear of wars,

and rumours of wars,  
 be ye not troubled : for *such things* must needs be ; but the end *shall not be* yet.

<sup>8</sup>For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom :

and there shall be earthquakes in divers places, and there shall be famines, and troubles.



*Luke xxi. 5—7.*

saying, Master,  
but when shall these  
things be? and what sign *will*  
*there be* when these things  
shall come to pass?

THE BEGINNING OF SORROWS

*Luke xxi. 8—11.*

<sup>8</sup> And he said,

Take heed that  
ye be not deceived:

For many shall come in  
my name, saying, I am *Christ*;

and the time draweth near:  
go ye not therefore after them.

<sup>9</sup> But when ye shall hear  
of wars,  
and commotions,

be not terrified: for these  
things must first come to pass;  
but the end *is* not by and by.

<sup>10</sup> Then said he unto them,  
Nation shall rise against  
nation, and kingdom against  
kingdom:

<sup>11</sup> And great earthquakes  
shall be in divers places, and  
famines, and pestilences;

and fearful sights and great

*Matt. xxiv. 4—8.*

<sup>8</sup>All these *are* the beginning  
of sorrows.

*Mark xiii. 5—8.*

These *are* the beginnings  
of sorrows.

## SECTION III

*Matt. xxiv. 9—14.*

<sup>9</sup>Then shall they deliver you  
up

to be afflicted,

and shall kill you :

and ye shall be hated of all  
nations for my name's sake.

*Mark xiii. 9—13.*

<sup>9</sup> But take heed to your-  
selves :

for they shall  
deliver you up to councils;  
and in the synagogues ye

shall be beaten : and ye shall  
be brought before rulers and  
kings

for my sake,

for a testimony  
against them.

<sup>10</sup> And the gospel must first  
be published among all na-  
tions.

<sup>11</sup> But when they shall lead  
*you*, and deliver you up,  
take no thought beforehand  
what ye shall speak, neither  
do ye premeditate:  
but whatsoever shall be given  
you in that hour, that speak  
ye :

*Luke xxi. 8—11.*

signs shall there be from  
heaven.

*SUFFERING OF DISCIPLES*

*Luke xxi. 12—19.*

<sup>12</sup> But before all these, they  
shall lay their hands on you,  
and persecute *you*,

delivering *you* up to  
the synagogues  
and into prisons,

being brought before  
kings and rulers

for my name's sake.

<sup>13</sup> And it shall turn to you  
for a testimony.

<sup>14</sup> Settle *it* therefore in your  
hearts, not to meditate before  
what ye shall answer :

<sup>15</sup> For I will give you a

*Matt.* xxiv. 9—14.*Mark* xiii. 9—13.

<sup>10</sup> And then shall many be  
offended,

and  
shall betray one another, and  
shall hate one another,

<sup>11</sup> And many false prophets  
shall rise, and shall deceive  
many.

<sup>12</sup> And because iniquity shall  
abound, the love of many shall  
wax cold.

<sup>13</sup> But he that  
shall endure unto the end, the  
same shall be saved.

<sup>14</sup> And this gospel of the  
kingdom shall be preached in  
all the world for a witness unto  
all nations; and then shall the  
end come.

for it is not ye that speak, but  
the Holy Ghost\*.

<sup>12</sup> Now the brother shall be-  
tray the brother to death, and  
the father the son; and chil-  
dren shall rise up against *their*  
parents,

and  
shall cause them to be put to  
death.

<sup>13</sup> And ye shall be hated of  
all *men* for my name's sake:

but he that  
shall endure unto the end, the  
same shall be saved.

\* See Holy Week, pp. 256—258.

*Luke xxi. 12—19.*

mouth and wisdom, which all  
your adversaries shall not be  
able to gainsay nor resist.

<sup>16</sup> And ye shall be betrayed  
both by  
parents, and brethren,

and kinsfolks, and friends;  
and *some* of you  
shall they cause to be put to  
death.

<sup>17</sup> And ye shall be hated of  
all *men* for my name's sake.

<sup>18</sup> But there shall not an hair  
of your head perish.

<sup>19</sup> In your patience possess  
ye your souls.

## SECTION IV

*Matt. xxiv. 15—28.*

<sup>15</sup> When ye therefore shall  
see

the abomination of desolation,  
spoken of by Daniel the pro-  
phet, stand in the holy place,

(whoso readeth, let him un-  
derstand:)

<sup>16</sup> Then let them which be  
in Judea flee into the moun-  
tains:

<sup>17</sup> Let him which is on  
the housetop not come down

to take any thing out of his  
house:

<sup>18</sup> Neither let him which is  
in the field return back  
to take his clothes.

*Mark xiii. 14—23.*

<sup>14</sup> But when ye shall  
see

the abomination of desolation,  
spoken of by Daniel the pro-  
phet, standing  
where it ought not,

(let him that readeth un-  
derstand,)

then let them that be  
in Judea flee to the moun-  
tains:

<sup>15</sup> And let him that is on  
the housetop not go down into  
the house, neither enter  
*therein,*

to take any thing out of his  
house:

<sup>16</sup> And let him that is  
in the field not turn back again  
for to take up his garment.

<sup>19</sup> And woe unto them that

<sup>17</sup> But woe to them that

---

*THE DAYS OF ANTICHRIST*

*Luke xxi. 20—24.*

<sup>20</sup> And when ye shall  
see  
Jerusalem compassed with  
armies,

then know that the desolation  
thereof is nigh.

<sup>21</sup> Then let them which are  
in Judea flee to the moun-  
tains;

and let them which are in the  
midst of it depart out;

and let not them that are in  
the countries enter thereinto.

<sup>22</sup> For these be the days of  
vengeance, that all things  
which are written may be ful-  
filled.

<sup>23</sup> But woe unto them that

*Matt.* xxiv. 15—28.

are with child, and to them  
that give suck in those days!

<sup>20</sup> But pray ye that your  
flight be not in the winter,  
neither on the sabbath-day:

<sup>21</sup> For then shall be  
great tribulation,

such as was not since the be-  
ginning of the world

to this time, no, nor ever  
shall be.

<sup>22</sup> And except those days  
should be shortened, there  
should no flesh be saved: but  
for the elect's sake  
those days shall be shortened.

<sup>23</sup> Then if any man shall  
say unto you, Lo, here *is*  
Christ, or there; believe *it*  
not.

<sup>24</sup> For there shall arise false  
Christs, and false prophets,  
and shall shew great signs  
and wonders; insomuch that,  
if *it were* possible, they shall  
deceive the very elect.

*Mark* xiii. 14—23.

are with child, and to them  
that give suck in those days!

<sup>18</sup> And pray ye that your  
flight be not in the winter.

<sup>19</sup> For *in* those days shall be  
affliction,

such as was not from the be-  
ginning of the creation  
which God created

unto this time, neither  
shall be.

<sup>20</sup> And except that the Lord  
had shortened those days, no  
flesh should be saved: but for  
the elect's sake, whom he hath  
chosen, he hath shortened the  
days.

<sup>21</sup> And then if any man shall  
say to you, Lo, here *is* Christ;  
or, lo, *he* is there; believe *him*  
not:

<sup>22</sup> For false  
Christs and false prophets  
shall rise, and shall shew signs  
and wonders, to seduce, if *it*  
*were* possible,  
even the elect.



*Luke xxi. 20—24.*

are with child, and to them  
that give suck, in those days!

for there shall be  
great distress  
in the land, and wrath upon  
this people.

<sup>24</sup> And they shall fall by the  
edge of the sword, and shall  
be led away captive into all  
nations: and Jerusalem shall  
be trodden down of the Gen-  
tiles, until the times of the  
Gentiles be fulfilled.

*Matt. xxiv. 15—28.*

<sup>25</sup> Behold, I have told you before.

<sup>26</sup> Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, *he is* in the secret chambers; believe *it* not. <sup>27</sup> For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. <sup>28</sup> For wheresoever the carcase is, there will the eagles be gathered together.

*Mark xiii. 14—23.*

<sup>23</sup> But take ye heed: behold, I have foretold you all things.

## SECTION V

*Matt. xxiv. 29—31.*

<sup>29</sup> Immediately after the tribulation of those days

shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light,

and the stars shall fall from heaven,

*Mark xiii. 24—27.*

<sup>24</sup> But in those days, after that tribulation,

the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light,

<sup>25</sup> And the stars of heaven shall fall,

and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken:

<sup>30</sup> And then shall appear

and the powers that are in heaven shall be shaken.

*THE SON OF MAN COMING**Luke xxi. 25—27.*

<sup>25</sup> And there shall be  
signs in the sun,  
and in the moon,  
and in the stars ;

and upon the earth distress of  
nations, with perplexity ; the  
sea and the waves roaring.

<sup>26</sup> Men's hearts failing them  
for fear, and for looking after  
those things which are coming  
on the earth :

for the powers of  
heaven shall be shaken.

*Matt. xxiv. 29—31.*

the sign of the Son of man in  
heaven: and then shall all  
the tribes of the earth mourn,  
and they shall see the  
Son of man coming in the  
clouds of heaven with power  
and great glory.

<sup>31</sup> And he shall send his  
angels  
with a great sound of a trum-  
pet, and they shall gather  
together his elect from the  
four winds,

from one end of heaven to the  
other.

*Mark xiii. 24—27.*

<sup>26</sup> And then shall they see  
the Son of man coming in the  
clouds with great power  
and glory.

<sup>27</sup> And then shall he send his  
angels,

and shall gather  
together his elect from  
the four winds, from the utter-  
most part of the earth to the  
uttermost part of heaven.

## SECTION VI

*Matt. xxiv. 32—51.*

<sup>32</sup> Now learn a parable of  
the fig tree;

When his branch is yet  
tender, and putteth forth  
leaves, ye know

that summer is  
nigh:

<sup>33</sup> So likewise ye,

*Mark xiii. 28—37.*

<sup>28</sup> Now learn a parable of  
the fig tree:

When her branch is yet  
tender, and putteth forth  
leaves, ye know

that summer is  
near:

<sup>29</sup> So ye in like manner,

---

*Luke xxi. 25—27.*

<sup>27</sup> And then shall they see  
the Son of man coming in a  
cloud with power  
and great glory.

*THE WARNINGS*

*Luke xxi. 28—36.*

<sup>28</sup> And when these things  
begin to come to pass, then  
look up, and lift up your  
heads; for your redemption  
draweth nigh.

<sup>29</sup> And he spake to them  
a parable;

Behold the fig tree,  
and all the trees;

<sup>30</sup> When they  
now shoot forth,  
ye see and know of your own  
selves, that summer is now  
nigh at hand.

<sup>31</sup> So likewise ye,

*Matt. xxiv. 32—51.*

when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, *even* at the doors.

<sup>34</sup> Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled.

<sup>35</sup> Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.

<sup>36</sup> But of that day and hour knoweth no *man*, no, not the angels of heaven,

but my Father only.

<sup>37</sup> But as the days of Noe *were*, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. <sup>38</sup> For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, <sup>39</sup> and knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. <sup>40</sup> Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

<sup>41</sup> Two *women shall be* grinding at the mill: the one shall be taken, and the other left.

*Mark xiii. 28—37.*

when ye shall see these things come to pass, know that it is nigh, *even* at the doors.

<sup>30</sup> Verily I say unto you, that this generation shall not pass, till all these things be done.

<sup>31</sup> Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

<sup>32</sup> But of that day and *that* hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.

*Luke xxi. 28—36.*

when ye see these things  
come to pass, know ye that the  
kingdom of God is nigh at hand.

<sup>32</sup> Verily I say unto you,  
This generation shall not  
pass away, till all be

fulfilled.

<sup>33</sup> Heaven and earth shall  
pass away: but my words  
shall not pass away.

<sup>34</sup> And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness,

*Matt. xxiv. 32—51.**Mark xiii. 28—37.*<sup>42</sup> Watch therefore :<sup>33</sup> Take ye heed, watch and pray :

for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come. <sup>43</sup> But know this, that if the good man of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up. <sup>44</sup> Therefore be ye also ready : for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh.

for ye know not when the time is.

<sup>34</sup> *For the Son of man is as a man taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave authority to his servants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch\*.* <sup>35</sup> Watch ye therefore : for ye know not when the master of the house cometh ; at even, or at midnight, or at the cock crowing, or in the morning : <sup>36</sup> lest coming

\* See Holy Week, pp. 320, 321.



---

*Luke xxi. 28—36.*

and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares. <sup>35</sup> For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth.

<sup>36</sup> Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.

*Matt. xxiv. 32—51.*

<sup>45</sup> Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? <sup>46</sup> Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. <sup>47</sup> Verily I say unto you, that he shall make him ruler over all his goods. <sup>48</sup> But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; <sup>49</sup> and shall begin to smite *his* fellow servants, and to eat and drink with the drunken; <sup>50</sup> the lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for *him*, and in an hour that he is not aware of, <sup>51</sup> and shall cut him asunder, and appoint *him* his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

*Mark xiii. 28—37.*

suddenly, he find you sleeping. <sup>37</sup> And what I say unto you, I say unto all, Watch.

## SECTION VII

### PARABLE OF THE TEN VIRGINS

*Matt. xxv. 1—13.*

<sup>1</sup> Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. <sup>2</sup> And five of them were wise, and five

*Matt. xxv. 1—13.*

were foolish. <sup>3</sup>They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them: <sup>4</sup>but the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. <sup>5</sup>While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. <sup>6</sup>And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him. <sup>7</sup>Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. <sup>8</sup>And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out. <sup>9</sup>But the wise answered, saying, *Not so*; lest there be

not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves.

<sup>10</sup>And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut.

<sup>11</sup>Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. <sup>12</sup>But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not. <sup>13</sup>Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh.

## SECTION VIII

## PARABLE OF THE TALENTS \*

*Matt. xxv. 14—30.*

<sup>14</sup>For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods: <sup>15</sup>and unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey. <sup>16</sup>Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and

made them other five talents.

<sup>17</sup>And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two. <sup>18</sup>But he that had received one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money. <sup>19</sup>After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them. <sup>20</sup>And so he that had received five talents came, and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst

\* See Holy Week, pp. 341, 342.

*Matt. xxv. 14—30.*

unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more. <sup>21</sup> His lord said unto him, Well done, *thou* good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. <sup>22</sup> He also that had received two talents came, and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beside them. <sup>23</sup> His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. <sup>24</sup> Then he which had received the one talent came, and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where

thou hast not strawed: <sup>25</sup> and I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, *there* thou hast *that is* thine. <sup>26</sup> His lord answered and said unto him, *Thou* wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed: <sup>27</sup> thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and *then* at my coming I should have received mine own with usury. <sup>28</sup> Take therefore the talent from him, and give *it* unto him which hath ten talents. <sup>29</sup> For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not, shall be taken away, even that which he hath. <sup>30</sup> And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

## SECTION IX

*THE SON OF MAN ON THE THRONE OF HIS GLORY**Matt. xxv. 31—46.*

<sup>31</sup> When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the

throne of his glory: <sup>32</sup> and before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from an-

*Matt. xxv. 31—46.*

other, as a shepherd divideth *his* sheep from the goats :  
<sup>33</sup>and shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

<sup>34</sup>Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world. <sup>35</sup>For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in: <sup>36</sup>naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me. <sup>37</sup>Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed *thee*? or thirsty, and gave *thee* drink? <sup>38</sup>When saw we thee a stranger, and took *thee* in? or naked, and clothed *thee*? <sup>39</sup>Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee? <sup>40</sup>And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you,

Inasmuch as ye have done *it* unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done *it* unto me.

<sup>41</sup>Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: <sup>42</sup>for I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: <sup>43</sup>I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. <sup>44</sup>Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee? <sup>45</sup>Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did *it* not to one of the least of these, ye did *it* not to me. <sup>46</sup>And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.

*Luke xxi. 37, 38.*

<sup>37</sup>And in the daytime\*, he was teaching in the temple, and at night he went out, and abode in the mount that is

called *the mount* of Olives. <sup>38</sup>And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple for to hear him.

\* See Holy Week, p. 368.

## PART XIII

### The Last Supper

#### SECTION I

*Matt. xxvi. 1—5. 14—16.*

AND it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples,

<sup>2</sup> Ye know that after two days is *the feast* of the passover,

and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified.

<sup>3</sup> Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas,

<sup>4</sup> And consulted that they might take Jesus by subtilty; and kill him.

*Mark xiv. 1, 2. 10, 11.*

<sup>1</sup> After two days was *the feast* of the passover, and of unleavened bread :

and the chief priests and scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death.

THE BETRAYAL \*

*Luke* xxii. 1—6.

<sup>1</sup>Now the  
feast of unleavened bread  
drew nigh, which is called the  
Passover.

<sup>2</sup>And the chief priests and  
scribes sought how they might  
kill him;

\* See Holy Week, pp. 370—375.



*Matt. xxvi. 1—5. 14—16.*

<sup>5</sup> But they said, Not on the feast *day*, lest there be an uproar among the people.

<sup>14</sup> Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot,

went unto

the chief priests,

<sup>15</sup> And said *unto them*, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you?

And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver.

<sup>16</sup> And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him.

*Mark xiv. 1, 2. 10, 11.*

<sup>2</sup> But they said, Not on the feast *day*, lest there be an uproar of the people.

<sup>10</sup> And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve,

went unto

the chief priests,

to betray him unto them.

<sup>11</sup> And when they heard *it*, they were glad, and promised to give him money,

And he sought how he might conveniently betray him.

## SECTION II

*Matt. xxvi. 17—19.*

<sup>17</sup> Now the first *day* of the *feast of unleavened bread*

the disciples

*Mark xiv. 12—16.*

<sup>12</sup> And the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the passover,

his disciples



*Luke xxii. 1—6.*

for they feared the people.

<sup>3</sup>Then entered Satan\* into Judas, surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve.

<sup>4</sup>And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them.

<sup>5</sup>And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money.

<sup>6</sup>And he promised, and sought opportunity to betray him in the absence of the multitude.

*PREPARATION FOR THE PASSOVER**Luke xxii. 7—13.*

<sup>7</sup>Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the passover must be killed.

<sup>8</sup>And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go and prepare us the passover, that we may eat.

<sup>9</sup>And they

\* See Holy Week, pp. 375, 376.

*Matt. xxvi. 17—19.**Mark xiv. 12—16.*

came to Jesus,

saying

said

unto him,

unto him,

Where wilt thou that we  
prepare for thee  
to eat the passover \*?

Where wilt thou that we go  
and prepare that thou mayest  
eat the passover?

<sup>18</sup> And he said,

<sup>13</sup> And he sendeth forth two  
of his disciples,

and saith

Go

unto them,

Go ye

into the city

into the city, and there shall  
meet you a man bearing a  
pitcher of water: follow him.

<sup>14</sup> And wheresoever he shall  
go in,

to such a man, and say unto  
him, The Master saith,

say ye to the good man of the  
house, The Master saith,

My time is at hand;

Where is

I will keep the passover  
at thy house  
with my disciples.

the guest-chamber, where I  
shall eat the passover

with my disciples?

<sup>19</sup> And the disciples

<sup>15</sup> And he will shew you a  
large upper room furnished  
and prepared: there make  
ready for us.

<sup>16</sup> And his disciples went  
forth,

did as Jesus had appointed  
them;

and came into the city, and

\* See Holy Week pp. 381—390.

*Luke* xxii. 7—13.

said  
unto him,  
Where wilt thou that we  
prepare?

<sup>10</sup>And he said  
unto them,

Behold, when ye are entered  
into the city, there shall  
a man meet you, bearing a  
pitcher of water; follow him  
into the house where he  
entereth in.

<sup>11</sup>And ye shall  
say unto the good man of the  
house, The Master saith unto  
thee,

Where is  
the guest-chamber, where I  
shall eat the passover

with my disciples?

<sup>12</sup>And he shall shew you a  
large upper room furnished:  
there make  
ready.

<sup>13</sup>And they went,

and

*Matt. xxvi. 17—19.*

and they made ready the  
passover.

*Mark xiv. 12—16.*

found as he had said unto  
them:

and they made ready the  
passover.

### SECTION III

*Matt. xxvi. 20.*

<sup>20</sup> Now when the even was  
come, he sat down with the  
twelve.

*Mark xiv. 17.*

<sup>17</sup> And in the evening  
he cometh with the  
twelve.

*Luke* xxii. 7—13.

found as he had said unto them :

and they made ready the passover.

THE CUP OF THE OLD TESTAMENT

*Luke* xxii. 14—18.

<sup>14</sup> And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him.

<sup>15</sup> And he said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer. <sup>16</sup> For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God. <sup>17</sup> And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide *it* among yourselves. <sup>18</sup> For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.

*John* xiii. 1.

<sup>1</sup> Now before the feast of the Passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.

## SECTION IV

## WASHING THE DISCIPLES' FEET

*John* xiii. 2—17.

<sup>2</sup> And supper being ended, the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's *son*, to betray him; <sup>3</sup> Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God; <sup>4</sup> he riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments, and took a towel, and girded himself. <sup>5</sup> After that he pour-

eth water into a bason, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe *them* with the towel wherewith he was girded. <sup>6</sup> Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and Peter saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet? <sup>7</sup> Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter. <sup>8</sup> Peter saith unto

## SECTIONS V\* and VI

*Matt.* xxvi. 24. 21—25.

<sup>24</sup> The Son of man goeth as it is written of him; but woe unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! it had been good for that man if he had not been born.

*Mark* xiv. 21. 18—20.

<sup>21</sup> The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him: but woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! good were it for that man if he had never been born.

\* See Holy Week, Pt. iv. § v. on the "Order of Circumstances."

*John xiii. 2—17.*

him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me. <sup>9</sup> Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also *my hands and my head*. <sup>10</sup> Jesus saith to him, He that is washed needeth not save to wash *his* feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all. <sup>11</sup> For he knew who should betray him; therefore said he, Ye are not all clean. <sup>12</sup> So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was sat down again, he said

unto them, Know ye what I have done unto you? <sup>13</sup> Ye call me Master and Lord: and ye say well: for *so* I am. <sup>14</sup> If I then, *your* Lord and Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet. <sup>15</sup> For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you. <sup>16</sup> Verily, verily, I say unto you, The servant is no greater than his lord; neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him. <sup>17</sup> If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them.

*JUDAS PRESENT**Luke xxii. 21—30.*

<sup>21</sup> But, behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me *is* with me on the table.

<sup>22</sup> And truly the Son of man goeth, as it was determined: but woe unto that man by whom he *is* betrayed!

*John xiii. 18—30.*

<sup>23</sup> And they began to enquire among themselves,

*Matt.* xxvi. 24. 21—25.

*Mark* xiv. 21. 18—20.



*Luke xxii. 21—30*

which of them it was that should do this thing.

<sup>24</sup> And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest\*. <sup>25</sup> And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them, and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors. <sup>26</sup> But ye *shall* not be so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve. <sup>27</sup> For whether *is* greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? *is* not he that sitteth at meat? but I am among you as he that serveth. <sup>28</sup> Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations. <sup>29</sup> And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me; <sup>30</sup> that ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

*John xiii. 18—30.*

<sup>18</sup> I speak not of you all: I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel against me. <sup>19</sup> Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye

\* See Holy Week, p. 419.

*Matt. xxvi. 24. 21—25.*

<sup>21</sup> And as they  
did eat, he said,

Verily, I say unto you,  
that one of you  
shall betray me.

<sup>22</sup> And they were exceeding  
sorrowful, and began every  
one of them to say unto him,  
Lord, is it I?

*Mark xiv. 21. 18—20.*

<sup>18</sup> And as they sat and  
did eat, Jesus said,

Verily, I say unto you,  
one of you which eateth with  
me shall betray me.

<sup>19</sup> And they began to be  
sorrowful, and

to say unto him  
one by one, *Is it I?*

and another  
*said, Is it I?*

<sup>23</sup> And he answered and

<sup>20</sup> And he answered and

*Luke* xxii. 21—30.

*John* xiii. 18—30.

may believe that I am *he*.  
<sup>20</sup> Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.  
<sup>21</sup> When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.

<sup>22</sup> Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.

<sup>23</sup> Now there was leaning on Jesus' bosom one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved.  
<sup>24</sup> Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake. <sup>25</sup> He then lying on Jesus' breast, saith unto him, Lord, who is it? <sup>26</sup> Jesus answered, He it is, to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped it. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon.

*Matt. xxvi. 24. 21—25.*

said,

He that dippeth *his* hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me.

<sup>25</sup> Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast said.

*Mark xiv. 21. 18—20.*

said unto them, *It is* one of the twelve, that dippeth with me in the dish.

## SECTION VII

### ST. PETER WARNED

*John xiii. 31—38.*

<sup>31</sup> Therefore, when he was gone out, Jesus said, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him. <sup>32</sup> If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorify him in him-

self, and shall straightway glorify him. <sup>33</sup> Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me: and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come;

*Luke* xxii. 21—30.

*John* xiii. 18—30.

<sup>27</sup> And after the sop Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest, do quickly. <sup>28</sup> Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto him. <sup>29</sup> For some of *them* thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy *those things* that we have need of against the feast; or, that he should give something to the poor. <sup>30</sup> He then having received the sop went immediately out: and it was night.

*John* xiii. 31—38.

so now I say to you. <sup>34</sup> A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another: as I have loved you, that ye also love one another.

<sup>35</sup> By this shall all *men* know

that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

<sup>36</sup> Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered him, Whither I go, thou canst not

*John xiii. 31—38.*

follow me now; but thou shalt follow me afterwards. <sup>37</sup> Peter said unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thy sake. <sup>38</sup> Jesus answered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake? Verily, verily, I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow till thou hast denied me thrice.

*Luke xxii. 31—38.*

<sup>31</sup> And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat: <sup>32</sup> but I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted strengthen thy brethren. <sup>33</sup> And he said unto

## SECTION VIII

*Matt. xxvi. 26.*

<sup>26</sup> And as they were eating,

Jesus took bread,  
and  
blessed *it*, and brake *it*,  
and gave *it* to the disciples,  
and said, Take, eat;  
this is my body.

*Mark xiv. 22.*

<sup>22</sup> And as they did eat,

Jesus took bread,  
and  
blessed, and brake *it*,  
and gave to them,  
and said, Take, eat:  
this is my body.

*Luke xxii. 31—38.*

him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee, both into prison, and to death. <sup>34</sup> And he said, I tell thee, Peter, The cock shall not crow this day before that thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.

<sup>35</sup> And he said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing. <sup>36</sup> Then said he unto them, But now, he that hath

a purse, let him take *it*, and likewise *his* scrip: and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one. <sup>37</sup> For I say unto you, that this that is written must yet be accomplished in me, And he was reckoned among the transgressors: for the things concerning me have an end. <sup>38</sup> And they said, Lord, behold here *are* two swords. And he said unto them, It is enough.

## THE BREAD

*Luke xxii. 19.*

<sup>19</sup> And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake *it*, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me.

*1 Cor. xi. 23, 24.*

<sup>23</sup> The Lord Jesus the *same* night in which he was betrayed took bread:

<sup>24</sup> And when he had given thanks, he brake *it*,

and said, Take, eat: this is my body which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me.



## SECTION IX

## CHRIST CONSOLING HIS DISCIPLES

*John xiv. 1—31.*

<sup>1</sup> Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. <sup>2</sup> In my Father's house are many mansions: if it *were* not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. <sup>3</sup> And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, *there* ye may be also. <sup>4</sup> And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.

<sup>5</sup> Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way? <sup>6</sup> Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. <sup>7</sup> If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also; and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.

<sup>8</sup> Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. <sup>9</sup> Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he

that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou *then*, Shew us the Father?

<sup>10</sup> Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father, that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works. <sup>11</sup> Believe me that I *am* in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake.

<sup>12</sup> Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater *works* than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father.

<sup>13</sup> And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. <sup>14</sup> If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do *it*.

<sup>15</sup> If ye love me, keep my commandments. <sup>16</sup> And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; <sup>17</sup> *even* the Spirit of



*John xiv. 1—31.*

truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you. <sup>18</sup> I will not leave you comfortless; I will come to you. <sup>19</sup> Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also. <sup>20</sup> At that day ye shall know that I *am* in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you. <sup>21</sup> He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him. <sup>22</sup> Judas saith unto him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the world? <sup>23</sup> Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him. <sup>24</sup> He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me. <sup>25</sup> These

things have I spoken unto you, being *yet* present with you. <sup>26</sup> But the Comforter, *which is* the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

<sup>27</sup> Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid. <sup>28</sup> Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come *again* unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I. <sup>29</sup> And now I have told you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye might believe. <sup>30</sup> Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me. <sup>31</sup> But that the world may know that I love the Father; and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do. Arise, let us go hence\*.

\* See Holy Week, p. 481.

## SECTION X

*Matt. xxvi. 27—29.*

<sup>27</sup>And  
he took the cup,

and gave  
thanks, and gave *it* to them,  
saying,

Drink ye all of it;

<sup>28</sup>For this is my blood of  
the New testament, which is  
shed for many for the remis-  
sion of sins.

<sup>29</sup>But I say unto you,  
I will not drink henceforth of  
this fruit of the vine, until that  
day when I drink it new with  
you in my Father's kingdom.

*Mark xiv. 23—25.*

<sup>23</sup>And  
he took the cup,

and when he had given  
thanks, he gave *it* to them;  
and they all drank of it.

<sup>24</sup>And he said unto them,

This is my blood of  
the new testament, which is  
shed for many.

<sup>25</sup>Verily I say unto you,  
I will drink no more of the  
fruit of the vine, until that  
day that I drink it new  
in the kingdom of God.

## SECTION XI

## THE TRUE VINE

*John xv. 1—27; xvi. 1—4.*

<sup>1</sup>I am the true vine, and  
my Father is the husband-  
man. <sup>2</sup>Every branch in me  
that beareth not fruit he  
taketh away: and every  
*branch* that beareth fruit, he  
purgeth it, that it may bring

forth more fruit. <sup>3</sup>Now ye  
are clean through the word  
which I have spoken unto you.  
<sup>4</sup>Abide in me, and I in you.  
As the branch cannot bear  
fruit of itself, except it abide  
in the vine; no more can ye,

## THE CUP OF THE NEW TESTAMENT

*Luke* xxii. 20.

also the cup  
<sup>20</sup> Likewise  
 after supper,

saying,

This cup is the new testa-  
 ment in my blood, which is  
 shed for you.

*1 Cor.* xi. 25.

<sup>25</sup> After the same manner  
 also *he took* the cup,  
 when he had supped,

saying,

This cup is the new testa-  
 ment in my blood :

this do ye, as oft as ye drink  
*it*, in remembrance of me.

*John* xv. 1—27; xvi. 1—4.

except ye abide in me. <sup>5</sup> I am  
 the vine, ye *are* the branches:  
 he that abideth in me, and  
 I in him, the same bringeth  
 forth much fruit; for without  
 me, ye can do nothing. <sup>6</sup> If  
 a man abide not in me, he  
 is cast forth as a branch, and  
 is withered; and men gather  
 them, and cast *them* into the  
 fire, and they are burned. <sup>7</sup> If  
 ye abide in me, and my words  
 abide in you, ye shall ask  
 what ye will, and it shall be

*John* xv. 1—27; xvi. 1—4.

done unto you. <sup>8</sup>Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples. <sup>9</sup>As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love. <sup>10</sup>If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love. <sup>11</sup>These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and *that* your joy might be full.

<sup>12</sup>This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you. <sup>13</sup>Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends. <sup>14</sup>Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. <sup>15</sup>Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you. <sup>16</sup>Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and *that* your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father

in my name, he may give it you. <sup>17</sup>These things I command you, that ye love one another.

<sup>18</sup>If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before *it hated* you. <sup>19</sup>If ye were of the world the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. <sup>20</sup>Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also. <sup>21</sup>But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me. <sup>22</sup>If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloke for their sin. <sup>23</sup>He that hateth me hateth my Father also. <sup>24</sup>If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father. <sup>25</sup>But *this cometh to pass*, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in

*John xv. 1—27; xvi. 1—4.*

their law, They hated me without a cause.

<sup>26</sup> But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, *even* the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me: <sup>27</sup> and ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning.

<sup>1</sup> These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended. <sup>2</sup> They shall put you out of the synagogues:

yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service. <sup>3</sup> And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me. <sup>4</sup> But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning; because I was with you.

## SECTION XII

### PROMISE OF THE COMFORTER

*John xvi. 5—33.*

<sup>5</sup> But now I go my way to him that sent me; and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou? <sup>6</sup> But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart. <sup>7</sup> Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you. <sup>8</sup> And when he is come, he will reprove

the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment: <sup>9</sup> of sin because they believe not on me; <sup>10</sup> of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more; <sup>11</sup> of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged. <sup>12</sup> I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. <sup>13</sup> Howbeit, when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall



*John xvi. 5—33.*

not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, *that* shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come.

<sup>14</sup> He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew *it* unto you. <sup>15</sup> All things that the Father hath are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shew *it* unto you.

<sup>16</sup> A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father.

<sup>17</sup> Then said *some* of his disciples among themselves, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while, and yeshall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me: and, Because I go to the Father? <sup>18</sup> They said, therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we cannot tell what he saith. <sup>19</sup> Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them, Do ye inquire among yourselves of that I said, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me? <sup>20</sup> Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be

sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. <sup>21</sup> A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world. <sup>22</sup> And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you. <sup>23</sup> And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give *it* you. <sup>24</sup> Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full. <sup>25</sup> These things have I spoken unto you in proverbs: but the time cometh, when I shall no more speak unto you in proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father. <sup>26</sup> At that day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you: <sup>27</sup> for the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God. <sup>28</sup> I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave

*John xvi. 5—33.*

the world, and go to the Father.

<sup>29</sup> His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no proverb. <sup>30</sup> Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we believe that thou camest forth from God. <sup>31</sup> Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe?

<sup>32</sup> Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me. <sup>33</sup> These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.

## SECTION XIII

### THE GREAT INTERCESSION

*John xvii. 1—26.*

<sup>1</sup> These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee: <sup>2</sup> as thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him. <sup>3</sup> And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent. <sup>4</sup> I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou

gavest me to do. <sup>5</sup> And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

<sup>6</sup> I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word. <sup>7</sup> Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee. <sup>8</sup> For I have given unto them the

*John xvii. 1—26.*

words which thou gavest me; and they have received *them*, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me. <sup>9</sup> I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine. <sup>10</sup> And all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them. <sup>11</sup> And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we *are*. <sup>12</sup> While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest

me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. <sup>13</sup> And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves. <sup>14</sup> I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

<sup>15</sup> I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil. <sup>16</sup> They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

<sup>17</sup> Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.

<sup>18</sup> As thou hast sent me into

## SECTION XIV

*Matt. xxvi. 30—35.*

<sup>30</sup> And when they had sung an hymn, they

went out

into the mount of Olives.

*Mark xiv. 26—31.*

<sup>26</sup> And when they had sung an hymn, they

went out

into the mount of Olives.



*John xvii. 1—26.*

the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. <sup>19</sup>And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.

<sup>20</sup>Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; <sup>21</sup>that they all may be one; as thou, Father, *art* in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. <sup>22</sup>And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: <sup>23</sup>I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that

the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me. <sup>24</sup>Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world. <sup>25</sup>O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me. <sup>26</sup>And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare *it*: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them.

*THE GOING FORTH**Luke xxii. 39.*

<sup>39</sup>And he came out, and went,  
as he was wont,  
to the mount of Olives;

*John xviii. 1.*

<sup>1</sup>When Jesus had spoken these words,

he  
went  
forth with his disciples,

*Matt.* xxvi. 30—35.

*Mark* xiv. 26—31.

<sup>31</sup> Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.

<sup>32</sup> But after I am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee.

<sup>33</sup> Peter answered and said unto him, Though all *men* shall be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended.

<sup>34</sup> Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this night, before the cock crow,

thou shalt deny me thrice.

<sup>35</sup> Peter said unto him,

Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee.

Likewise also said all the disciples.

<sup>27</sup> And Jesus saith unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered.

<sup>28</sup> But after that I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee.

<sup>29</sup> But Peter said unto him, Although all shall be offended, yet *will* not I.

<sup>30</sup> And Jesus saith unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this day, *even* in this night, before the cock crow twice,

thou shalt deny me thrice.

<sup>31</sup> But he spake the more vehemently,

If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in any wise.

Likewise also said they all.

*Luke* xxii. 39.

and his disciples also followed him.

## PART XIV

### The Passion

#### SECTION I

*Matt. xxvi. 36—46.*

THEN cometh Jesus with  
them unto a place called  
Gethsemane,

*Mark xiv. 32—42.*

<sup>32</sup>And they came  
to a place which was named  
Gethsemane;

and saith unto the disciples,  
Sit ye here, while I go and  
pray yonder.

and he saith to his disciples,  
Sit ye here, while I shall  
pray.

<sup>37</sup>And he took with him  
Peter and the two sons of  
Zebedee, and began to be  
sorrowful, and very heavy.

<sup>38</sup>Then saith he unto them,  
My soul is exceeding sorrow-  
ful, even unto death: tarry ye  
here, and watch with me.

<sup>39</sup>And he went a little  
farther,

<sup>33</sup>And he taketh with him  
Peter and James and John,  
and began to be sore amazed,  
and to be very heavy;

<sup>34</sup>And saith unto them,  
My soul is exceeding sorrow-  
ful unto death: tarry ye  
here, and watch.

<sup>35</sup>And he went forward  
a little,

OUR LORD'S AGONY IN THE GARDEN

*Luke* xxii. 40—46.

<sup>40</sup>And when he was  
at the place

*John* xviii. 1.

over the brook Cedron,

where was a garden, into the  
which he entered, and his  
disciples.

he said unto them,

Pray that ye enter not into  
temptation.

<sup>41</sup>And he was withdrawn \*  
from them about a stone's  
cast, and kneeled down,

\* See *Passion*, pp. 10—12.

*Matt. xxvi. 36—46.*

and fell on his face,  
and prayed,

saying, O my  
Father,

if it be possible, let  
this cup pass from me: never-  
theless not as I will, but as  
thou wilt.

<sup>40</sup> And he cometh unto the  
disciples, and findeth them  
asleep,

and saith unto Peter,

What, could ye not watch  
with me one hour?

<sup>41</sup> Watch and pray, that  
ye enter not into temptation:  
the spirit indeed *is* willing,  
but the flesh *is* weak.

<sup>42</sup> He went away again  
the second time, and prayed,  
saying, O my Father, if this  
cup may not pass away from  
me, except I drink it, thy  
will be done.

<sup>43</sup> And he came and

*Mark xiv. 32—42.*

and fell on the ground,  
and prayed that, if it were  
possible, the hour might pass  
from him.

<sup>36</sup> And he said, Abba,  
Father, all things *are* possible  
unto thee;

take  
away this cup from me: never-  
theless not what I will, but  
what thou wilt.

<sup>37</sup> And he cometh,  
and findeth them

sleeping,

and saith unto Peter,  
Simon, sleepest thou?  
couldst not thou watch  
one hour?

<sup>38</sup> Watch ye and pray, lest  
ye enter into temptation.

The spirit truly *is* ready,  
but the flesh *is* weak.

<sup>39</sup> And again he went away,  
and prayed,

and spake the  
same words.

<sup>40</sup> And when he returned,

---

*Luke xxii. 40—46.*

and prayed,

<sup>42</sup> Saying,

Father.

if thou be willing, remove  
this cup from me: never-  
theless not my will, but thine,  
be done. <sup>43</sup> And there ap-  
peared an angel unto him  
from heaven, strengthening  
him. <sup>44</sup> And being in an agony  
he prayed more earnestly:  
and his sweat was as it were  
great drops of blood falling  
down to the ground. <sup>45</sup> And  
when he rose up from prayer,  
and was come to his  
disciples, he found them  
sleeping for sorrow,

<sup>46</sup> And said unto them,

Why sleep ye?

rise and pray, lest  
ye enter into temptation.

*Matt. xxvi. 36—46.*

found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy.

<sup>44</sup>And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.

<sup>45</sup>Then cometh he to his disciples, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take *your* rest: behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

<sup>46</sup>Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that doth betray me.

*Mark xiv. 32—42.*

he found them asleep again, (for their eyes were heavy,) neither wist they what to answer him.

<sup>41</sup>And he cometh the third time, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take *your* rest: it is enough, the hour is come; behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

<sup>42</sup>Rise up, let us go; lo, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

## SECTION II

*Matt. xxvi. 47—56.*

*Mark xiv. 43—52.*

<sup>47</sup>And while he yet spake, lo, Judas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a great multitude with

<sup>43</sup>And immediately while he yet spake, cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with



*CHRIST BETRAYED AND APPREHENDED**Luke xxii. 47—53.**John xviii. 2—11.*

<sup>2</sup>And Judas also, which betrayed him, knew the place : for Jesus oftentimes resorted thither with his disciples.

<sup>3</sup>Judas then, having received a band *of men* and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns, and torches, and weapons.

<sup>47</sup> And while  
he yet spake, behold

a multitude,

*Matt.* xxvi. 47—56.

swords and staves, from the  
chief priests and elders of the  
people.

<sup>48</sup> Now he that betrayed him  
gave them a sign,  
saying, Whomsoever I shall  
kiss, that same is he:

hold him fast.

<sup>49</sup> And forthwith he  
came  
to Jesus,

and said, Hail, master;  
and kissed him.

<sup>50</sup> And Jesus said unto him,  
Friend,  
wherefore art thou come?

*Mark* xiv. 43—52.

swords and staves, from the  
chief priests and the scribes  
and the elders.

<sup>44</sup> And he that betrayed him  
had given them a token,  
saying, Whomsoever I shall  
kiss, that same is he;  
take him,

and lead *him* away safely.

<sup>45</sup> And as soon as he was  
come, he goeth  
straightway to him,

and saith, Master, master;  
and kissed him.

---

*Luke* xxii. 47—53.*John* xviii. 2—11.

and he that was called Judas,  
one of the twelve, went before  
them\*,

and drew near unto Jesus  
to kiss him.

<sup>48</sup> But Jesus said unto him,  
Judas,

betrayest thou the Son of man  
with a kiss?

<sup>4</sup> Jesus therefore, knowing  
all things that should come  
upon him, went forth, and said  
unto them, Whom seek ye?  
<sup>5</sup> They answered him, Jesus of  
Nazareth. Jesus saith unto  
them, I am *he*. And Judas  
also, which betrayed him, stood  
with them. <sup>6</sup> As soon then as  
he had said unto them, I am  
*he*, they went backward, and  
fell to the ground. <sup>7</sup> Then

\* See *Passion*, pp. 41—43.

*Matt.* xxvi. 47—56.*Mark* xiv. 43—52.

Then came they, and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.

<sup>46</sup> And they laid their hands on him, and took him.

<sup>51</sup> And, behold, one of them which were with Jesus,

<sup>47</sup> And one of them that stood by,

stretched out *his* hand, and drew his sword, and struck a servant of the high priest, and smote off his ear.

drew a sword, and smote a servant of the high priest, and cut off his ear.

<sup>52</sup> Then said Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into his place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword. <sup>53</sup> Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels? <sup>54</sup> But how then shall the scriptures be ful-

*Luke xvii. 47—53.*

<sup>49</sup> When they which were about him saw what would follow, they said unto him, Lord, shall we smite with the sword?

<sup>50</sup> And one of them

smote  
the servant of the high priest,  
and cut off his right ear.

*John xviii. 2—11.*

asked he them again, Whom seek ye? And they said Jesus of Nazareth. <sup>8</sup> Jesus answered, I have told you that I am *he*: if therefore ye seek me, let these go their way: <sup>9</sup> that the saying might be fulfilled, which he spake, Of them which thou gavest me have I lost none.

<sup>10</sup> Then

Simon Peter

having a  
sword drew it, and smote  
the high priest's servant,  
and cut off his right ear.

The servant's name was  
Malchus.

<sup>11</sup> Then said Jesus unto  
Peter, Put up thy sword  
into the sheath:

*Matt.* xxvi. 47—56.

filled, that thus it must be ?

<sup>55</sup> In that same hour

said Jesus  
to the multitudes,

Are ye come out as  
against a thief with swords  
and staves for to take me ?

I sat daily with you  
teaching in the temple, and  
ye laid no hold on me.

<sup>56</sup> But all this was done, that  
the scriptures of the prophets  
might be fulfilled.

Then all the disciples for-  
sook him, and fled.

*Mark* xiv. 43—52.

<sup>48</sup> And Jesus answered and  
said unto them,

Are ye come out, as  
against a thief, with swords  
and *with* staves to take me ?

<sup>49</sup> I was daily with you  
in the temple teaching, and  
ye took me not :

but  
the scriptures

must be fulfilled.

<sup>50</sup> And they all for-  
sook him, and fled.

<sup>51</sup> And there followed him a  
certain young man, having a  
linen cloth cast about *his*  
naked *body* ; and the young  
men laid hold on him :  
<sup>52</sup> and he left the linen cloth,  
and fled from them naked.

*Luke* xxii. 47—53.

*John* xviii. 2—11.

the cup which my Father hath  
given me, shall I not drink it ?

<sup>51</sup> And Jesus answered and  
said, Suffer ye thus far. And  
he touched his ear and healed  
him.

<sup>52</sup> Then Jesus  
said unto the chief priests, and  
captains of the temple, and  
the elders, which were come  
to him. Be ye come out, as  
against a thief, with swords  
and staves ?

<sup>53</sup> When I was daily with  
you in the temple,  
ye stretched forth no hands  
against me : but this is your  
hour, and the power of dark-  
ness.

## SECTION III

*Matt.* xxvi. 57—75.*Mark* xiv. 53—72.

<sup>57</sup> And they that had laid hold on Jesus led *him* away to Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were assembled.

<sup>58</sup> But Peter followed him  
afar off,

<sup>53</sup> And they led Jesus away to the high priest:  
and with him were assembled all the chief priests and the elders and the scribes.

<sup>54</sup> And Peter followed him  
afar off,



## THE DENIALS OF ST. PETER

*Luke* xxii. 54—62.

<sup>54</sup>Then took they him, and led *him*, and brought him into the high priest's house.

And Peter followed  
afar off.

*John* xviii. 12—27.

<sup>12</sup>Then the band, and the captain and officers of the Jews, took Jesus and bound him: <sup>13</sup>and led him away to Annas first; for he was father in law to Caiaphas, which was the high priest that same year\*. <sup>14</sup>Now Caiaphas was he, which gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

<sup>15</sup>And Simon Peter followed Jesus,

and *so did* another disciple: that disciple was known unto the high priest, and went in with Jesus into the palace of the high priest. <sup>16</sup>But Peter stood at the door without. Then went out the other disciple, which was known unto the high priest, and spake unto her that kept the door, and brought in Peter.

\* See Passion, pp. 88—93.

*Matt.* xxvi. 57—75.*Mark* xiv. 53—72.

unto the high priest's palace,  
and went in,

even into  
the palace of the high priest:

and sat with the servants, to  
see the end.

<sup>69</sup> Now Peter sat without  
in the palace:  
and a damsel

came unto him,

saying,

Thou also wast with  
Jesus of Galilee.

<sup>70</sup> But he denied before  
*them* all, saying,

I know not  
what thou sayest.

and he sat with the servants,

and warmed himself at the  
fire\*.

<sup>66</sup> And as Peter was beneath  
in the palace, there cometh  
one of the maids of the high  
priest:

<sup>67</sup> And when she saw  
Peter warming himself,  
she looked upon him,  
and said,

And thou also wast with  
Jesus of Nazareth.

<sup>68</sup> But he denied,  
saying,

I know not, neither  
understand I what thou sayest.  
And he went out into the  
porch; and the cock crew.

\* See *Passion*, pp. 99—111.

*Luke* xxii. 54—62.*John* xviii. 12—27.

<sup>55</sup> And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall,

and were set down together,  
Peter sat down among them.

<sup>18</sup> And the servants and officers stood there,

who had made a fire of coals;

for it was cold: and they warmed themselves: and Peter stood with them,

and warmed himself.

<sup>56</sup> But a certain maid beheld him as he sat by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him,  
and said,

This man was also with him.

<sup>57</sup> And he denied him, saying, Woman,  
I know him not.

<sup>17</sup> Then saith the damsel that kept the door unto Peter,  
Art not thou also *one* of this man's disciples?

He saith,  
I am not.

*Matt. xxvi. 57—75.*

<sup>71</sup> And when he was gone  
out into the porch,  
another *maid* saw him,  
and said unto them that  
were there, This *fellow* was  
also with Jesus of Nazareth.

*Mark xiv. 53—72.*

<sup>69</sup> And a *maid* saw him again,  
and began to say to them that  
stood by, This is *one*  
of them.

<sup>72</sup> And again he denied

with an oath, I do not know  
the man.

<sup>73</sup> And after a while came  
unto *him* they that stood by,  
and said to Peter, Surely,  
thou also art *one* of them;  
for thy speech  
betrayeth thee.

<sup>70</sup> And he denied it again.

And a little after,  
they that stood by,  
said again to Peter, Surely,  
thou art *one* of them : for thou  
art a Galilean, and thy speech  
agreeth *thereto*.

<sup>74</sup> Then began he to curse  
and to swear, *saying*, I know  
not the man.

And immediately

the cock crew.

<sup>71</sup> But he began to curse  
and to swear, *saying*, I know  
not this man of whom ye speak.

<sup>72</sup> And the second time

the cock crew.

<sup>75</sup> And Peter remembered

And Peter called to mind

*Luke* xxii. 54—62.

*John* xviii. 12—27.

<sup>58</sup> And after a little while

another saw him,

and said,  
Thou art also

of them.

And Peter said, Man, I am  
not.

<sup>25</sup> And Simon Peter stood  
and warmed himself.

They said therefore unto  
him, Art not thou also  
*one* of his disciples?  
he denied *it*, and said, I am  
not.

<sup>59</sup> And about the space of  
one hour after, another con-  
fidently affirmed, saying,  
Of a truth, this *fellow* also was  
with him: for he is a Galilean.

<sup>26</sup> One of the servants of the  
high priest, (being *his* kins-  
man whose ear Peter cut off,)  
saith, Did not I see thee in  
the garden with him?

<sup>60</sup> And Peter  
said, Man, I know  
not what thou sayest.

And immediately  
while he yet spake,

the cock crew.

<sup>61</sup> And the Lord turned, and  
looked upon Peter.

And Peter remembered

<sup>27</sup> Peter then  
denied again:

and immediately

the cock crew.

*Matt.* xxvi. 57—75.

the word of Jesus, which  
said unto him, Before the  
cock crow, thou shalt  
deny me thrice.  
And he  
went out, and wept bitterly.

*Mark* xiv. 53—72.

the word that Jesus  
said unto him, Before the  
cock crow twice, thou shalt  
deny me thrice,  
And when he thought there-  
on, he wept.

## SECTION IV

### CHRIST IS CONDEMNED BEFORE CAIAPHAS

*John* xviii. 19—24.

<sup>19</sup> The high priest then  
asked Jesus of his disciples,  
and of his doctrine. <sup>20</sup> Jesus  
answered him, I spake openly  
to the world; I ever taught  
in the synagogue, and in the  
temple, whither the Jews

always resort; and in secret  
have I said nothing. <sup>21</sup> Why  
askest thou me? ask them  
which heard me, what I have  
said unto them; behold, they  
know what I said. <sup>22</sup> And  
when he had thus spoken, one

*Matt.* xxvi. 59—66.

<sup>59</sup> Now the chief priests,  
and elders,

and all the council, sought  
false witness against Jesus, to  
put him to death;

<sup>60</sup> But found none:

yea, though many false  
witnesses came,  
yet found they none.

At the last came two  
false witnesses,

<sup>61</sup> And said,

*Mark* xiv. 55—64.

<sup>55</sup> And the chief priests

and all the council sought  
for witness against Jesus to  
put him to death:

and found none.

<sup>56</sup> For many bare false  
witness against him,

but their witness agreed not  
together.

<sup>57</sup> And there arose certain,  
and bare false witness against  
him, saying,

*Luke* xxii. 54—62.

the word of the Lord, how he  
had said unto him, Before the  
cock crow, thou shalt

deny me thrice.

<sup>62</sup> And Peter  
went out, and wept bitterly.

*John* xviii. 19—24.

of the officers which stood by  
struck Jesus with the palm of  
his hand, saying, Answerest  
thou the high priest so?

<sup>23</sup> Jesus answered him, If I  
have spoken evil, bear witness

of the evil: but if well, why  
smitest thou me? <sup>24</sup> Now  
Annas had sent him bound  
unto Caiaphas, the high  
priest.

*Matt.* xxvi. 59—66.

'This fellow said,  
I am able to destroy the temple  
of God,  
and to build it in three days.

<sup>62</sup> And the high priest arose,

and

said unto him,

Answerest thou nothing?

what *is it which* these witness

*Mark* xiv. 55—64.

<sup>58</sup> We heard him say,

I will destroy this temple  
that is made with hands,  
and within three days I will  
build another made without  
hands.

<sup>59</sup> But neither so did their  
witness agree together.

<sup>60</sup> And the high priest stood  
up in the midst,

and asked Jesus,

saying,

Answerest thou nothing?

what *is it which* these witness

*Matt. xxvi. 59—66.*

against thee ?

<sup>63</sup> But Jesus held his peace.

And the high priest answered  
and said unto him,

I adjure thee by the living  
God, that thou tell us whether  
thou be the Christ, the Son of  
God.

<sup>64</sup> Jesus saith unto him,

Thou hast said :  
nevertheless I say unto you,

Hereafter shall ye see the  
Son of man sitting on the right

*Matt. xxvi. 67, 68.*

<sup>67</sup> Then did they spit in his  
face,

and

buffeted him ;  
and others smote *him*

with the palms of their hands ;

<sup>68</sup> Saying,  
Prophecy unto us, thou Christ,  
Who is he that smote thee ?

*Mark xiv. 55—64.*

against thee ?

<sup>61</sup> But he held his peace,  
and answered nothing.

Again the high priest asked  
him, and said unto him,

Art thou  
the Christ, the Son of the  
Blessed ?

<sup>62</sup> And Jesus said,  
I am :

and ye shall see the  
Son of man sitting on the right

*Mark xiv. 65.*

<sup>65</sup> And some began to spit  
on him,

and to cover his face,  
and

to buffet him,

and to say unto him,  
Prophecy.

And the servants did strike him  
with the palms of their hands.



*Matt. xxvi. 59—66.*

hand of power,  
and coming in the clouds of  
heaven.

<sup>65</sup> Then the high priest rent  
his clothes, saying,

He hath spoken blasphemy;  
what further need have we of  
witnesses?

behold, now ye have heard  
his blasphemy.

<sup>66</sup> What think ye? They  
answered and said,

He is guilty of death.

*Luke xxii. 63—65.*

<sup>63</sup> And the men that held  
Jesus mocked him, and smote  
*him*.

<sup>64</sup> And when they had blind-  
folded him,

they struck him  
on the face,

and asked him, saying,  
Prophecy,  
who is it that smote thee?

<sup>65</sup> And many other things  
blasphemously spake they  
against him.

*Mark xiv. 55—64.*

hand of power,  
and coming in the clouds of  
heaven.

<sup>63</sup> Then the high priest rent  
his clothes, and saith,

What need we any further  
witnesses?

<sup>64</sup> Ye have heard  
the blasphemy:

what think ye? And  
they all condemned him  
to be guilty of death.

*Matt. xxvii. 1, 2.*

<sup>1</sup> When the morning was come, all the chief priests and elders of the people took counsel

against Jesus to put him to death.

*Mark xv. 1.*

<sup>1</sup> And straightway in the morning the chief priests held a consultation with the elders\*, and scribes, and the whole council,

<sup>2</sup> And when they had bound him,

they led *him* away,

and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor.

and bound Jesus,

and carried *him* away,

and delivered *him* to Pilate.

\* See Passion, p. 160.

*Luke* xxii. 66—71; xxiii. 1.

*John* xviii. 28.

<sup>66</sup> And as soon as it was day, the elders of the people and the chief priests and the scribes came together, and led him into their council, saying, <sup>67</sup> Art thou the Christ? tell us. And he said unto them, If I tell you, ye will not believe: <sup>68</sup> and if I also ask *you*, ye will not answer me, nor let *me* go. <sup>69</sup> Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God. <sup>70</sup> Then said they all, Art thou then the Son of God? And he said unto them, Ye say that I am. <sup>71</sup> And they said, What need we any further witness? for we ourselves have heard of his own mouth.

<sup>1</sup> And the whole multitude of them arose,

and led him

unto Pilate.

<sup>28</sup> Then led they Jesus from Caiaphas unto the hall of judgment. And it was early.

## SECTION V

## OUR LORD DELIVERED UP TO PILATE

*John xviii. 28—36.*

<sup>28</sup> And they themselves went not into the judgment hall, lest they should be defiled: but that they might eat the passover. <sup>29</sup> Pilate then went out unto them, and said, What accusation bring ye against

this man? <sup>30</sup> They answered and said unto him, If he were not a malefactor, we would not have delivered him up unto thee. <sup>31</sup> Then said Pilate unto them, Take ye him, and judge him according to your

*Matt. xxvii. 11—14.*

<sup>11</sup> And Jesus stood before the governor :

*Mark xv. 2—5.*

and the governor asked him, saying, Art thou the king of the Jews?

And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest.

<sup>2</sup> And Pilate asked him, Art thou the king of the Jews?

And he answering, said unto him, Thou sayest it.

*John xviii. 28—36.*

law. The Jews therefore said unto him, It is not lawful for us to put any man to death: <sup>32</sup>that the saying of Jesus might be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying what death he should die. <sup>33</sup>Then Pilate entered into the judgment hall again, and called Jesus, and said unto him, Art thou the king of the Jews? <sup>34</sup>Jesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of thyself, or did others

tell it thee of me? <sup>35</sup>Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? Thine own nation and the chief priests have delivered thee unto me. What hast thou done? <sup>36</sup>Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.

*Luke xxiii. 2—5.*

<sup>2</sup>And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this *fellow* perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cesar, saying, that he himself is Christ a King.

<sup>2</sup> And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the king of the Jews?

And he answered him, and said, Thou sayest *it*.

*John xviii. 37, 38.*

<sup>37</sup> Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a king then\*?

Jesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my voice. <sup>38</sup>Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews,

\* See Passion, p. 196.

*Matt.* xxvii. 11—14.*Mark* xv. 2—5.

<sup>12</sup> And when he was accused  
of the chief priests and elders,

he answered nothing.

<sup>13</sup> Then said Pilate unto him,

Hearest thou not how many  
things they witness against  
thee?

<sup>14</sup> And he answered him to  
never a word; insomuch that  
the governor marvelled  
greatly.

<sup>3</sup> And the chief priests ac-  
cused him

of many things\*:  
but he answered nothing.

<sup>4</sup> And Pilate asked him  
again, saying, Answerest thou  
nothing?

behold, how many  
things they witness against  
thee.

<sup>5</sup> But Jesus yet answered  
nothing; so that

Pilate marvelled.

## SECTION VI

### CHRIST SENT TO HEROD

*Luke* xxiii. 6—12.

<sup>6</sup> When Pilate heard of Ga-  
lilee, he asked whether the  
man were a Galilean. <sup>7</sup> And  
as soon as he knew that he  
belonged unto Herod's juris-  
diction, he sent him to Herod,  
who himself also was at Je-  
rusalem at that time.

<sup>8</sup> And when Herod saw Je-  
sus, he was exceeding glad:

for he was desirous to see him  
of a long *season*, because he  
had heard many things of him;  
and he hoped to have seen  
some miracle done by him.  
<sup>9</sup> Then he questioned with him  
in many words; but he an-  
swered him nothing. <sup>10</sup> And  
the chief priests and scribes  
stood and vehemently accused

\* See *Passion*, pp. 199—201.

*Luke xxiii. 2—5.*

<sup>4</sup> Then said Pilate to the chief priests and to the people, I find no fault in this man.

<sup>5</sup> And they were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jewry, beginning from Galilee to this place.

*John xviii. 37, 38.*

and saith unto them,  
I find in him no fault at all.

*Luke xxiii. 6—12.*

him. <sup>11</sup> And Herod with his men of war set him at nought, and mocked *him*, and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate,

<sup>12</sup> And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together: for before they were at enmity between themselves.

## SECTION VII

*Matt. xxvii. 15—23.**Mark xv. 6—14.*

<sup>15</sup> Now at *that* feast the governor was wont to release unto the people a prisoner, whom they would.

<sup>16</sup> And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.

<sup>6</sup> Now at *that* feast he released

unto them one prisoner, whomsoever they desired.

<sup>7</sup> And there was *one* named Barabbas, *which lay* bound with them that had made insurrection with him, who had committed murder in the insurrection. <sup>8</sup> And the multitude crying aloud began to



## CHRIST REJECTED OF THE PEOPLE

*Luke* xxiii. 13—23.

*John* xviii. 39, 40.

<sup>13</sup> And Pilate, when he had called together the chief priests and the rulers, and the people, <sup>14</sup> said unto them, Ye have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people: and, behold, I, having examined *him* before you, have found no fault in this man touching those things whereof ye accuse him: <sup>15</sup> no, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him; and, lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto *him*.

<sup>16</sup> I will therefore chastise him and release *him*.

<sup>17</sup> (For of necessity he must release one unto them at the feast.)

<sup>39</sup> But ye have a custom, that I should release unto you one at the passover:

*Matt. xxvii. 15—23.*

<sup>17</sup> Therefore when they were gathered together,

Pilate said unto them,

Whom will ye that I release unto you ? Barabbas, or Jesus which is called Christ ?

<sup>18</sup> For he knew that for envy they had delivered him.

<sup>9</sup> When he was set down\* on the judgment seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that just man : for I have suffered many things this day in a dream because of him.

<sup>20</sup> But the chief priests and elders persuaded the multitude

that they should ask Barabbas,

and destroy Jesus.

<sup>21</sup> The governor answered and said unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you ? They said,

*Mark xv. 6—14.*

desire *him to do* as he had ever done unto them.

<sup>9</sup> But

Pilate answered them, saying, Will ye that I release unto you

the king of the Jews ?

<sup>10</sup> For he knew that the chief priests had delivered him

for envy.

<sup>11</sup> But the chief priests moved the people,

that he should rather release Barabbas unto them.

<sup>12</sup> And Pilate answered and said again unto them,

\* See Passion, p. 252.

---

*Luke* xxiii. 13—23.*John* xviii. 39, 40.

Will ye therefore that I  
release unto you  
the king of the Jews?

<sup>18</sup> And they cried out all  
at once, saying, Away with  
this *man*,

and release  
unto us Barabbas: <sup>19</sup> (who for a  
certain sedition made in the  
city, and for murder, was cast  
into prison.)

<sup>20</sup> Pilate therefore, willing to  
release Jesus, spake again to  
them.

<sup>40</sup> Then cried they all  
again, saying, Not  
this man,

but Barabbas.  
Now Barabbas was a robber.

*Matt.* xxvii. 15—23.

Barabbas. <sup>22</sup> Pilatesaith unto them, What shall I do then with Jesus which is called Christ?

*They* all say unto him, Let him be crucified.

<sup>23</sup> And the governor said, Why, what evil hath he done?

*Mark* xv. 6—14.

What will ye then \* that I shall do *unto him* whom ye call the king of the Jews?

<sup>13</sup> And they cried out again, Crucify him.

<sup>14</sup> Then Pilate said unto them, Why, what evil hath he done?

But they cried out the more, saying,  
Let him be crucified.

And they cried out the more exceedingly,

Crucify him.

## SECTION VIII

*Matt.* xxvii. 27—30.

<sup>27</sup> Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band *of soldiers*.

<sup>28</sup> And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe,

<sup>29</sup> And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put *it* upon his head, and a

*Mark* xv. 16—19.

<sup>16</sup> And the soldiers led him away into the hall, called Pretorium; and they called together the whole band.

<sup>17</sup> And they clothed him with purple,

and platted a crown of thorns, and put it about his *head*,

\* See Passion, p. 215.

*Luke xxiii. 13—23.*

<sup>21</sup> But they cried, saying,  
Crucify *him*, crucify him.

<sup>22</sup> And he said unto  
them, the third time, Why,  
what evil hath he done? I  
have found no cause of death  
in him: I will therefore  
chastise him, and let *him* go.

<sup>23</sup> And they were instant  
with loud voices\*, requiring  
that he might be crucified.

CHRIST DELIVERED UP TO BE CRUCIFIED

*John xix. 1—15.*

<sup>1</sup> Then Pilate therefore took  
Jesus, and scourged † *him*.

<sup>2</sup> And the soldiers  
platted a crown of thorns, and  
put *it* on his head, and they

\* See Passion, p. 216.

† See Passion, pp. 217—223.

*Matt.* xxvii. 27—30.  
reed in his right hand:

and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, king of the Jews!

<sup>30</sup> And they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head.

*Mark* xv. 16—19.

<sup>18</sup> And began to salute him,

Hail, king of the Jews!

<sup>19</sup> And they smote him on the head, with a reed, and did spit upon him, and bowing their knees worshipped him.

*John* xix. 1—15.  
put on him a purple robe,

<sup>3</sup> And said,  
Hail, king of the Jews!  
and they smote  
him with their hands.

<sup>4</sup> Pilate therefore went forth again, and saith unto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know that I find no fault in him \*. <sup>5</sup> Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe. And *Pilate* saith unto them, Behold the man! <sup>6</sup> When the chief priests therefore and officers saw him, they cried out, saying, Crucify *him*, crucify *him*. Pilate saith unto them, Take ye him, and crucify *him*: for I find no fault in him. <sup>7</sup> The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by our law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God.

<sup>8</sup> When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he was the more afraid; <sup>9</sup> and went again into the judgment hall, and saith unto Jesus, Whence art thou? But Jesus gave him no answer. <sup>10</sup> Then saith Pilate

\* See *Passion*, p. 237.

*John xix. 1—15.*

unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have power to crucify thee, and have power to release thee? <sup>11</sup>Jesus answered, Thou couldest have no power *at all* against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto

thee hath the greater sin. <sup>12</sup>And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release him: but the Jews cried out, saying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Cesar's friend: whosoever maketh himself a king speaketh against Cesar.

<sup>13</sup>When Pilate therefore

*Matt. xxvii. 24—26. 31.*

<sup>24</sup>When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but *that* rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed *his* hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person: see ye *to it*. <sup>25</sup>Then answered all the people, and said, His blood be on us, and on our children.

*Mark xv. 15. 20.*

<sup>15</sup>And so Pilate, willing to content the people,

<sup>26</sup>Then released he Barabbas unto them :

released Barabbas unto them,

and when he scourged Jesus, he delivered *him*

and delivered Jesus, when he



*John* xix. 1—15.

heard that saying, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down in the judgment seat in a place that is called the Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha.<sup>14</sup> And it was the preparation of the passover, and about the sixth hour\*; and he saith

unto the Jews, Behold your king! <sup>15</sup> But they cried out, Away with *him*, away with *him*, crucify him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucify your king? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Cesar.

*Luke* xxiii. 23—25.

*John* xix. 16.

<sup>23</sup> And the voices of them and of the chief priests prevailed.

<sup>24</sup> And Pilate

gave sentence that it should be as they required.

<sup>25</sup> And he released unto them him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired;

but he delivered Jesus to their

<sup>16</sup> Then delivered he him

\* See Passion, p. 255.

*Matt.* xxvii. 24—26. 31.

to be crucified.

<sup>31</sup> And after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him,

and led him away, to crucify *him*.

*Mark* xv. 15. 20.

had scourged *him*, to be crucified.

<sup>20</sup> And when they had mocked him, they took off the purple robe from him, and put his own clothes on him,

and led him out to crucify him.

## SECTION IX

### THE REMORSE OF JUDAS

*Matt.* xxvii. 3—10.

<sup>3</sup> Then Judas \*, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, <sup>4</sup>saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they

said, What *is that* to us? see thou *to that*. <sup>5</sup> And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself. <sup>6</sup> And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and said, It is not lawful for to put them into the treasury, be-

## SECTION X

*Matt.* xxvii. 32.

<sup>32</sup> And as they came out,

they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name :

*Mark* xv. 21.

<sup>21</sup> And they compel one Simon, a Cyrenian, who passed by, coming out of the

\* See Passion, p. 169.

*Luke xxiii. 23—25.*

will.

*John xix. 16.*

therefore unto them, to be crucified.

And they took Jesus,  
and led *him* away.

*Matt. xxvii. 3—10.*

cause it is the price of blood.  
<sup>7</sup> And they took counsel, and  
bought with them the potter's  
field, to bury strangers in.

<sup>8</sup> Wherefore that field was  
called, The field of blood,  
unto this day. <sup>9</sup> (Then was  
fulfilled that which was spoken

by Jeremy the prophet, say-  
ing, And they took the thirty  
pieces of silver, the price of  
him that was valued, whom  
they of the children of Israel  
did value; <sup>10</sup> and gave them  
for the potter's field, as the  
Lord appointed me.)

#### THE WAY OF SORROWS

*Luke xxiii. 26—32.*

<sup>26</sup> And as they led him  
away,

they laid hold upon  
one Simon, a Cyrenian,  
coming out of the

*John xix. 17.*

<sup>17</sup> And he bearing his cross,

*Matt.* xxvii. 32.

him they compelled  
to bear his cross.

*Mark* xv. 21.

country, the father of Alex-  
ander and Rufus,

to bear his cross.

*Luke xxiii. 26—32.*

country,

and on him they laid  
the cross,  
that he might bear *it* after  
Jesus.

<sup>27</sup> And there followed him  
a great company of people,  
and of women, which also  
bewailed and lamented him.

<sup>28</sup> But Jesus turning unto  
them said, Daughters of Je-  
rusalem, weep not for me,  
but weep for yourselves, and  
for your children. <sup>29</sup> For, be-  
hold, the days are coming,  
in the which they shall say,  
Blessed *are* the barren, and  
the wombs that never bare,  
and the paps which never  
gave suck. <sup>30</sup> Then shall they  
begin to say to the mountains,  
Fall on us; and to the hills,  
Cover us. <sup>31</sup> For if they do  
these things in a green tree,  
what shall be done in the  
dry?

<sup>32</sup> And there were also two  
other, malefactors, led with  
him to be put to death.

## SECTION XI

*Matt.* xxvii. 33—49.

<sup>33</sup> And when they were come unto a place called Golgotha, that is

to say, The place of a skull,

<sup>34</sup> They gave him vinegar to drink mingled with gall: and when he had tasted *thereof*, he would not drink.

<sup>35</sup> Then were there two thieves crucified with him, one on the right hand, and another on the left.

<sup>35</sup> And they crucified him, and parted his garments,

casting lots

*Mark* xv. 22—36.

<sup>22</sup> And they bring him unto the place Golgotha, which is,

being interpreted, The place of a skull.

<sup>23</sup> And they gave him to drink wine mingled with myrrh: but he received *it* not.

<sup>27</sup> And with him they crucify two thieves, the one on his right hand, and the other on his left.

<sup>28</sup> And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was numbered with the transgressors.

<sup>24</sup> And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments,

casting lots upon them,

## THE CRUCIFIXION

*Luke* xxiii. 33—45.

<sup>33</sup> And when they were come  
to the place  
which is  
called Calvary,

*John* xix. 17—29.

<sup>17</sup> went forth  
into a place called,

*the place*  
of a skull, which is called in  
the Hebrew, Golgotha :

there they crucified him,  
and the malefactors, one on  
the right hand, and the other  
on the left.

<sup>18</sup> Where they crucified him,  
and two other with him, on  
either side one, and Jesus in  
the midst.

<sup>34</sup> Then said Jesus, Father,  
forgive them ; for they know  
not what they do.

And they  
parted his raiment,

<sup>23</sup> Then the soldiers, when  
they had crucified Jesus, took  
his garments, and made four  
parts, to every soldier a part ;  
and also *his* coat : now the  
coat was without seam, woven  
from the top throughout.

<sup>24</sup> They said therefore among  
themselves, Let us not rend  
it, but cast lots for it, whose  
it shall be :

and cast lots

*Matt.* xxvii. 33—49.

that it might be  
fulfilled, which was spoken by  
the prophet,

They parted my  
garments among them, and  
upon my vesture did they  
cast lots.

<sup>36</sup> And sitting down, they  
watched him there;

<sup>37</sup> And set up over his head  
his accusation written,

THIS IS JESUS  
THE KING OF THE JEWS.

*Mark* xv. 22—36.

what every man should take.

<sup>25</sup> And it was the third  
hour\*, and they crucified  
him.

<sup>26</sup> And the superscription of  
his accusation was written  
over,

THE KING OF THE JEWS.

<sup>39</sup> And they that passed by,  
reviled him, wagging their

<sup>29</sup> And they that passed by,  
railed on him, wagging their

\* See Passion, p. 256



---

*Luke* xxiii. 33—45.*John* xix. 17—29.

that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith,

They parted my raiment among them, and for my vesture did they cast lots.

These things therefore the soldiers did.

<sup>19</sup> And Pilate wrote a title, and put *it* on the cross. And the writing was,

JESUS OF NAZARETH,  
THE KING OF THE JEWS.

<sup>20</sup> This title then read many of the Jews: for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city: and it was written in Hebrew, and Greek, and Latin. <sup>21</sup> Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate, Write not, The king of the Jews; but that he said,

I am king of the Jews.

<sup>22</sup> Pilate answered, What I have written, I have written.

<sup>35</sup> And the people stood beholding.

*Matt. xxvii. 33—49.*

heads,

<sup>40</sup> And saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest *it* in three days, save thyself. If thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross.

<sup>41</sup> Likewise also the chief priests mocking *him*, with the scribes and elders, said,

<sup>42</sup> He saved others; himself he cannot save. If he be the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe in him.

<sup>43</sup> He trusted in God; let him deliver him now, if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God.

<sup>44</sup> The thieves also, which were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth.

*Mark xv. 22—36.*

heads,

and saying, Ah, thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest *it* in three days,

<sup>30</sup> Save thyself, and come down from the cross.

<sup>31</sup> Likewise also the chief priests mocking, said among themselves with the scribes,

He saved others; himself he cannot save. <sup>32</sup> Let Christ the King of Israel descend now from the cross, that we may see and believe.

And they that were crucified with him, reviled him.

---

*Luke* xxiii. 33—45.*John* xix. 17—29.

And the rulers  
also with them derided *him*,  
saying,

He saved others; let him  
save himself, if he be Christ  
the chosen of God.

<sup>36</sup> And the soldiers also  
mocked him, coming to him,  
and offering him vinegar,  
<sup>37</sup> and saying, If thou be the  
king of the Jews, save thy-  
self. <sup>38</sup> And a superscription\*  
also was written over him in  
letters of Greek, and Latin,  
and Hebrew, THIS IS THE  
KING OF THE JEWS.

<sup>39</sup> And one of the malefac-  
tors which were hanged railed  
on him, saying, If thou be  
Christ, save thyself and us.

<sup>40</sup> But the other answering re-  
buked him, saying, Dost not

\* See Passion, p. 313.

---

*Matt.* xxvii. 33—49.*Mark* xv. 22—36.

<sup>45</sup> Now from  
the sixth hour  
there was darkness over  
all the land unto the ninth  
hour.

<sup>46</sup> And about the ninth hour  
Jesus cried with a loud voice,  
saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabach-

<sup>33</sup> And when  
the sixth hour was come,  
there was darkness over  
the whole land until the ninth  
hour.

<sup>34</sup> And at the ninth hour  
Jesus cried with a loud voice,  
saying, Eloï, Eloï, lama sabach-

*Luke* xxiii. 33—45.

thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? <sup>41</sup> And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss. <sup>42</sup> And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom. <sup>43</sup> And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To-day shalt thou be with me in paradise.

*John* xix. 17—29.

<sup>25</sup> Now there stood by the cross of Jesus his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary, the *wife* of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene. <sup>26</sup> When Jesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loved, he saith unto his mother, Woman, behold thy son! <sup>27</sup> Then saith he to the disciple, Behold thy mother! And from that hour that disciple took her unto his own *home*.

<sup>44</sup> And it was about the sixth hour, and there was a darkness over all the earth until the ninth hour.

<sup>45</sup> And the sun was darkened.

*Matt.* xxvii. 33—49.

thani? that is to  
say, My God, my God, why  
hast thou forsaken me?

<sup>47</sup> Some of them that  
stood there, when they heard  
*that*, said, This *man* calleth  
for Elias.

*Mark* xv. 22—36.

thani? which is, being inter-  
preted, My God, my God, why  
hast thou forsaken me?

<sup>35</sup> And some of them that  
stood by, when they heard  
*it*, said, Behold, he calleth  
Elias.

<sup>48</sup> And straightway one of  
them ran, and took a sponge,  
and filled *it* with vinegar, and  
put *it* on a reed, and gave  
him to drink.

<sup>49</sup> The rest said, Let be,  
let us see whether Elias will  
come to save him.

<sup>36</sup> And one  
ran and filled a sponge full  
of vinegar, and  
put *it* on a reed, and gave  
him to drink,

saying, Let alone;  
let us see whether Elias will  
come to take him down.

## SECTION XII

*Matt.* xxvii. 50—56.

<sup>50</sup> Jesus, when he had cried  
again  
with a loud voice,

*Mark* xv. 37—41.

Jesus cried  
with a loud voice,

<sup>37</sup> And

*John* xix. 17—29.

<sup>28</sup> After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst.

<sup>29</sup> Now there was set a vessel full of vinegar :

and they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put *it* upon hyssop, and put it to his mouth.

THE DEATH OF CHRIST

*Luke* xxiii. 45—49.

<sup>45</sup> And the veil of the temple was rent in the midst.

<sup>46</sup> And when Jesus had cried

with a loud voice, he said,

*John* xix. 30—37.

<sup>30</sup> When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished :

and

*Matt.* xxvii. 50—56.*Mark* xv. 37—41.

yielded up the ghost.

<sup>51</sup> And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent;

<sup>52</sup> And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose, <sup>53</sup> and came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many\*.

<sup>54</sup> Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus,

saw the earthquake, and those things that were done,

they feared greatly,

saying,  
Truly this was

the Son of God.

and gave up the ghost.

<sup>38</sup> And the veil of the temple was rent† in twain from the top to the bottom.

<sup>39</sup> And when the centurion, which stood over against him,

saw

that he so cried out, and gave up the ghost,

he said,  
Truly this man was

the Son of God.

\* See Resurrection, pp. 31—38.

† See Passion, p. 366.



*Luke* xxiii. 45—49.

Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said thus,

he gave up the ghost.

*John* xix. 30—37.

he bowed his head,  
and gave up the ghost.

<sup>47</sup> Now when the centurion

saw

what was done,

he glorified God,  
saying,

Certainly this was  
a righteous man.

<sup>48</sup> And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breasts, and returned.

*Matt.* xxvii. 50—56.

<sup>55</sup> And many women were there beholding afar off, which followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him.

<sup>56</sup> Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of Zebedee's children.

*Mark* xv. 37—41.

<sup>40</sup> There were also women looking on afar off:

among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the less and of Joses, and Salome;

<sup>41</sup> (Who also, when he was in Galilee, followed him, and ministered unto him;) and many other women which came up with him unto Jerusalem.

*Luke* xxiii. 45—49.

<sup>49</sup> And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood afar off, beholding these things.

*John* xix. 30—37.

<sup>31</sup> The Jews therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the sabbath day, (for that sabbath day was an high day,) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and *that* they might be taken away. <sup>32</sup> Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him. <sup>33</sup> But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs: <sup>34</sup> but one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came thereout blood and water. <sup>35</sup> And he that saw it bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe. <sup>36</sup> For these things were done, that the scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken. <sup>37</sup> And again another scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced.

## SECTION XIII

*Matt. xxvii. 57—61.*<sup>57</sup> When the even was come,

there came a rich man  
of Arimathea,

named Joseph,

himself was  
Jesus's disciple:

to Pilate, and

begged the body of Jesus.

commanded

*Mark xv. 42—47.*<sup>42</sup> And now

when the even was come,  
because it was the preparation,  
that is, the day before the  
sabbath,

Arimathea,  
an honourable counsellor,

which also  
waited  
for the kingdom of God,

boldly  
unto Pilate, and

craved the body of Jesus.

<sup>44</sup> And Pilate marvelled if  
he were already dead: and  
calling *unto him* the centurion,  
he asked him whether he had  
been any while dead. <sup>45</sup> And  
when he knew *it* of the  
centurion,

Then Pilate

## THE EVENING OF THE CRUCIFIXION

*Luke* xxiii. 50—56.*John* xix. 38—42.<sup>38</sup> And after this

<sup>50</sup> And, behold,  
*there was* a man  
 named Joseph,

Joseph  
 of Arimathea,

a counsellor ;  
*and he was* a good man, and  
 a just :

<sup>51</sup> (The same had not con-  
 sented to the counsel and  
 deed of them;) *he was* of  
 Arimathea, a city of the Jews:  
 who also himself waited for  
 the kingdom of God.

being a  
 disciple of Jesus, but secretly  
 for fear of the Jews,  
 besought

<sup>52</sup> This *man* went  
 unto Pilate, and  
 begged the body of Jesus.

Pilate,  
 that he might take  
 away the body of Jesus :

and Pilate  
 gave *him* leave.

*Matt.* xxvii. 57—61.

the body  
to be delivered.

*Mark* xv. 42—47.

he gave the body  
to Joseph.

Joseph

<sup>59</sup> And when

had taken  
the body, he wrapped it in a  
clean linen cloth,

he

bought fine linen,

and took  
him down, and wrapped him  
in the linen,

<sup>46</sup> And

<sup>60</sup> And laid  
it in his own new tomb, which  
he had hewn out in the rock :

and laid  
him in a sepulchre which was  
hewn out of a rock,

and he rolled a great stone

and rolled a stone

*Luke* xxiii. 50—56.*John* xix. 38—42.

He came therefore, and took the body of Jesus. <sup>39</sup> And there came also Nicodemus, which at the first came to Jesus by night, and brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about an hundred pound weight.

<sup>53</sup> And

he

took

it down, and wrapped it in linen,

<sup>40</sup> Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury. <sup>41</sup> Now in the place where he was crucified there was a garden; and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid. <sup>42</sup> There laid they Jesus therefore because of the Jews' preparation day; for the sepulchre was nigh at hand.

and laid

it in a sepulchre that was hewn in stone, wherein never man before was laid.

<sup>54</sup> And that day was the preparation, and the sabbath drew on.

*Matt. xxvii. 57—61.*

to the door of the sepulchre,  
and departed.

<sup>61</sup>And there was Mary Mag-  
dalene, and the other Mary,

sitting over against  
the sepulchre.

*Mark xv. 42—47.*

unto the door of thesepulchre.

<sup>47</sup> And Mary Mag-  
dalene and Mary *the mother*  
of Joses

beheld  
where he was laid.



---

*Luke* xxiii. 50—56.

<sup>55</sup> And the women also,

which came with him from  
Galilee, followed after; and

beheld the sepulchre,  
and how his body was laid.

<sup>56</sup> And they returned, and  
prepared spices and oint-  
ments; and rested the sabbath  
day according to the com-  
mandment.

## PART XV

### The Resurrection

#### SECTION I

##### THE GREAT SABBATH\*

*Matt. xxvii. 62—66.*

NOW the next day, that followed the day of the preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate, <sup>63</sup>saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again. <sup>64</sup>Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest

his disciples come by night and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first. <sup>65</sup>Pilatesaith unto them, Ye have a watch: go your way, make *it* as sure as ye can. <sup>66</sup>So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

#### SECTION II

##### THE END OF THE SABBATH

*Matt. xxviii. 2—4. 1.*

*Mark xvi. 1—4.*

<sup>1</sup>And when the sabbath was past†, Mary Magdalene and Mary the *mother* of James,

\* See Resurrection, Pt. I. § i.

† See Resurrection, p. 12.

*Matt.* xxviii. 2—4. 1.

<sup>2</sup> And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it. <sup>3</sup> His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow: <sup>4</sup> and for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead *men*.

<sup>1</sup> In the end of the sabbath, as it began to dawn toward the first *day* of the week,

came

Mary Magdalene and the other Mary,  
to see the sepulchre.

*Mark* xvi. 1—4.

and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him.

<sup>2</sup> And

very early in the morning, the first *day* of the week,  
at the rising of the sun,  
they came

unto the sepulchre.

<sup>3</sup> And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre? <sup>4</sup> And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away: for it was very great.

## SECTION III

## AN ANGEL SPEAKS TO THE WOMEN

*Matt.* xxviii. 5—8.

<sup>5</sup> And the angel answered  
and said unto the women,  
Fear not ye: for I know that  
ye seek Jesus,

which was crucified.

<sup>6</sup> He is not here: for he is  
risen, as he said,

Come, see the place where  
the Lord lay,

<sup>7</sup> And go quickly, and tell  
his disciples  
that he is risen from the dead;  
and, behold, he goeth before  
you into Galilee; there shall  
ye see him:

lo, I have told you.

<sup>8</sup> And they departed quickly  
from the sepulchre

with fear and great joy; and  
did run to bring his disciples  
word.

*Mark* xvi. 5—8.

<sup>5</sup> And entering into the sepulchre,  
they saw a young man  
sitting on the right side,  
clothed in a long white garment;  
and they were affrighted.

<sup>6</sup> And he saith unto them\*,  
Be not affrighted:  
Ye seek Jesus of Nazareth,  
which was crucified:

he is risen; he is not here:  
behold the place where they  
laid him.

<sup>7</sup> But go your way, tell  
his disciples and Peter

that he goeth before  
you into Galilee: there shall  
ye see him, as he said unto  
you.

<sup>8</sup> And they went out quickly  
and fled from the sepulchre;  
for they trembled and were  
amazed: neither said they any  
thing to any *man*; for they  
were afraid.

\* See Resurrection, p. 71.

## SECTION IV

## THE GUARD PROCEED TO THE CHIEF PRIESTS

*Matt. xxviii. 11—15.*

<sup>11</sup> Now, when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the city, and shewed unto the chief priests all the things that were done.

<sup>12</sup> And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers, <sup>13</sup> saying, Say ye, His disciples came

by night, and stole him *away* while we slept. <sup>14</sup> And if this come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and secure you. <sup>15</sup> So they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

## SECTION V

## MARY MAGDALENE CALLS ST. PETER AND ST. JOHN

*Luke xxiv. 12.*

<sup>2</sup> Then arose Peter\*, and ran

\* See Resurrection, pp. 88—91.

*John xx. 1—10.*

<sup>1</sup> The first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early, when it was yet dark, unto the sepulchre, and seeth the stone taken away from the sepulchre. <sup>2</sup> Then she runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple, whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him †.

<sup>3</sup> Peter therefore went forth,

† See Resurrection, pp. 63, 64.

*Luke xxiv. 12.*

unto the sepulchre, and stooping down, he beheld the linen clothes laid by themselves,

and departed,

wondering in himself at that which was come to pass.

*John xx. 1—10.*

and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre. <sup>4</sup>So they ran both together: and the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the sepulchre. <sup>5</sup>And he stooping down, *and looking in*, saw the linen clothes lying; yet went he not in. <sup>6</sup>Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen clothes lie, <sup>7</sup>and the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by itself. <sup>8</sup>Then went in also that other disciple, which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw, and believed. <sup>9</sup>For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead. <sup>10</sup>Then the disciples went away again unto their own home.

## SECTION VI

*OUR LORD APPEARS TO MARY MAGDALENE*

*John xx. 11—18.*

<sup>11</sup> But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping: and as she wept, she stooped down, *and looked* into the sepulchre,

*John* xx. 11—18.

<sup>12</sup>and seeth two angels in white sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain. <sup>13</sup>And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him. <sup>14</sup>And when she had thus said, she turned herself back and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus. <sup>15</sup>Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou have

borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away. <sup>16</sup>Jesus saith unto her, Mary. She turned herself, and saith unto him, Rabboni; which is to say, Master. <sup>17</sup>Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to my Father; but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father; and to my God, and your God. <sup>18</sup>Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that she had seen the Lord, and that he had spoken these things unto her.

*Mark* xvi. 9—11.

<sup>9</sup>Now when *Jesus* was risen early the first *day* of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven devils. <sup>10</sup>And she went and told them that

had been with him, as they mourned and wept. <sup>11</sup>And they, when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, believed not.



## SECTION VII

## OUR LORD SEEN BY THE WOMEN\*

*Matt. xxviii. 9, 10.*

<sup>9</sup> And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they came and held him by the feet, and worshipped him.

<sup>10</sup> Then said Jesus unto them, Be not afraid: go tell my brethren that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

## SECTION VIII

## THE WOMEN IN ST. LUKE'S ACCOUNT

*Luke xxiv. 1—11.*

<sup>1</sup> Now upon the first *day* of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain *others* with them. <sup>2</sup> And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre. <sup>3</sup> And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus. <sup>4</sup> And it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments: <sup>5</sup> and as they were afraid, and bowed down *their* faces to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye the living among the dead? <sup>6</sup> He is not here, but is risen: remember how

he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee, <sup>7</sup> saying, The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again. <sup>8</sup> And they remembered his words, <sup>9</sup> and returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest. <sup>10</sup> It was Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary *the mother* of James and other *women that were* with them, which told these things unto the apostles †. <sup>11</sup> And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.

\* See Resurrection, pp. 113—122.

† See Resurrection, p. 132.



## SECTION IX

## THE DISCIPLES GOING TO EMMAUS

*Mark* xvi. 12.

<sup>12</sup> After that he appeared in another form unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the country.

*Luke* xxiv. 13—32.

<sup>13</sup> And, behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem *about* threescore furlongs. <sup>14</sup> And they talked together of all these things which had happened. <sup>15</sup> And it came to pass, that, while they communed *together*, and reasoned, Jesus himself drew near, and went with them. <sup>16</sup> But their eyes were holden that they should not know him. <sup>17</sup> And he said unto them, What manner of communications *are* these that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and are sad? <sup>18</sup> And the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering, said unto him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to pass there in these days? <sup>19</sup> And he said unto them, What things? and they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people: <sup>20</sup> and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered

*Luke xxiv. 13—32.*

him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him. <sup>21</sup>But we trusted that it had been he which should have redeemed Israel: and beside all this, to-day is the third day since these things were done. <sup>22</sup>Yea, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepulchre; <sup>23</sup>and when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive. <sup>24</sup>And certain of them which were with us went to the sepulchre, and found *it* even so as the women had said; but him they saw not. <sup>25</sup>Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken: <sup>26</sup>ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory? <sup>27</sup>And

beginning at Moses, and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself. <sup>28</sup>And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further. <sup>29</sup>But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us, for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them. <sup>30</sup>And it came to pass as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed *it*, and brake, and gave to them. <sup>31</sup>And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight. <sup>32</sup>And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?

## SECTION X

*THEIR RETURN TO JERUSALEM**Mark xvi. 13.*

<sup>13</sup> And they  
went

*Luke xxiv. 33—35.*

<sup>33</sup> And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them

*Mark xvi. 13.*

and told it unto the residue :

neither believed they them.

*Luke xxiv. 33—35.*

that were with them,

<sup>34</sup> Saying, the Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon. <sup>35</sup> And they told what things *were done* in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.

## SECTION XI

### OUR LORD APPEARS TO THE APOSTLES IN THE ABSENCE OF ST. THOMAS

*Luke xxiv. 36—43.*

<sup>36</sup> And as they thus spake

Jesus himself

stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace *be* unto you.

<sup>37</sup> But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit.

<sup>38</sup> And he said unto them, Why are ye troubled ? and why do thoughts arise in your hearts ?

<sup>39</sup> Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself ; handle me, and see ; for a spirit hath

*John xx. 19—23.*

<sup>19</sup> Then the same day at evening, being the first *day* of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus

and

stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace *be* unto you.

*Luke xxiv. 36—43.*

not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.

<sup>40</sup> And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them *his* hands and his feet.

*John xx. 19—23.*

<sup>20</sup> And when he had so said, he shewed unto them *his* hands

and his side. Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the Lord. <sup>21</sup> Then said Jesus to them again, Peace *be* unto you: as *my* Father hath sent me, even so send I you. <sup>22</sup> And when he had said this, he breathed on *them*, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost: <sup>23</sup> whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; *and* whose soever *sins* ye retain, they are retained.

<sup>41</sup> And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here any meat?

<sup>42</sup> And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an honeycomb. <sup>43</sup> And he took *it*, and did eat before them.

## SECTION XII

### SECOND APPEARANCE TO THE APOSTLES, THOMAS BEING PRESENT

*Mark xvi. 14.*

*John xx. 24—29.*

<sup>24</sup> But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was

*Mark xvi. 14.*

<sup>14</sup> Afterward he appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen.

*John xx. 24—29.*

not with them when Jesus came. <sup>26</sup> The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe.

<sup>26</sup> And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them; *then* came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace *be* unto you.

<sup>27</sup> Then said he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust *it* into my side; and be not faithless, but believing. <sup>28</sup> And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God. <sup>29</sup> Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed *are* they that have not seen, and *yet* have believed.

## SECTION XIII

## CHRIST APPEARS BY THE LAKE IN GALILEE

*Matt.* xxviii. 16.

<sup>16</sup>Then the eleven disciples  
went away into Galilee,—

*John* xxi. 1—24.

<sup>1</sup>After these things Jesus shewed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and on this wise shewed he *himself*. <sup>2</sup>There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the *sons* of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples. <sup>3</sup>Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also go with thee. They went forth, and entered into a ship immediately; and that night they caught nothing. <sup>4</sup>But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore: but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus. <sup>5</sup>Then Jesus saith unto them, Children, have ye any meat? They answered him, No. <sup>6</sup>And he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes. <sup>7</sup>Therefore



*John xxi. 1—24.*

that disciple whom Jesus loved saith unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt *his* fisher's coat *unto him*, (for he was naked,) and did cast himself into the sea. <sup>8</sup> And the other disciples came in a little ship; (for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits,) dragging the net with fishes. <sup>9</sup> As soon then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and bread. <sup>10</sup> Jesus saith unto them, Bring of the fish which ye have now caught. <sup>11</sup> Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

<sup>12</sup> Jesus saith unto them, Come *and* dine. And none of the disciples durst ask him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord. <sup>13</sup> Jesus then cometh, and taketh bread, and giveth them, and fish likewise. <sup>14</sup> This is now the third time that Jesus shewed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

<sup>15</sup> So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter,

Simon, *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto him, yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my lambs. <sup>16</sup> He saith to him again the second time, Simon, *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee, He saith unto him, Feed my sheep. <sup>17</sup> He saith unto him the third time, Simon, *son* of Jonas, Lovest thou me? Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep. <sup>18</sup> Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdest thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry *thee* whither thou wouldest not. <sup>19</sup> This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me. <sup>20</sup> Then Peter, turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus

loved following; which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee? <sup>21</sup> Peter seeing him saith to Jesus, Lord, and what *shall* this man *do*? <sup>22</sup> Jesus saith unto him, If I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee? follow thou me. <sup>23</sup> Then went this saying

abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: yet Jesus said not unto him, He shall not die; but, If I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee?

<sup>24</sup> This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true.

## SECTION XIV

### OUR LORD APPEARS ON THE MOUNTAIN IN GALILEE

#### *Matt. xxviii. 16—20.*

<sup>16</sup> into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them. <sup>17</sup> And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted. <sup>18</sup> And Jesus came, and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.

<sup>19</sup> Go ye therefore and teach

all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost; <sup>20</sup> teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and lo, I am with you always, *even* unto the end of the world. Amen.

#### *Mark xvi. 15—18.*

<sup>15</sup> And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. <sup>16</sup> He that believeth and is baptized, shall be saved; but he that believeth not, shall be damned. <sup>17</sup> And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name

shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; <sup>18</sup> they shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.



## SECTION XV

## VARIOUS MANIFESTATIONS

1 Cor. xv. 5—7.

<sup>5</sup> He was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve :

<sup>6</sup> After that he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once : of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep.

<sup>7</sup> After that, he was seen of James, then of all the apostles.

Acts i. 3.

<sup>3</sup> To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God.

## SECTION XVI

## CHRIST APPEARS TO THE APOSTLES AT JERUSALEM

Luke xxiv. 44—49.

<sup>44</sup> And he said unto them, These *are* the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the law of Moses, and *in* the prophets, and *in* the psalms, concerning me. <sup>45</sup> Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures. <sup>46</sup> And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved

Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day : <sup>47</sup> and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. <sup>48</sup> And ye are witnesses of these things. <sup>49</sup> And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you : but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high.

*Acts i. 4—8.*

<sup>4</sup> And, being assembled together with *them*, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which, *saith he*, ye have heard of me. <sup>5</sup> For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence.

<sup>6</sup> When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou

at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel? <sup>7</sup> And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power. <sup>8</sup> But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.

## SECTION XVII

*Mark xvi. 19, 20.*

<sup>19</sup> So then after the Lord had spoken unto them,

he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.

*Luke xxiv. 50—53.*

<sup>50</sup> And he led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them.

<sup>51</sup> And it came to pass,

while he blessed them,

he was parted from them,

and carried up into heaven.

*THE ASCENSION**Acts i. 9—12.*

<sup>9</sup> And when  
he had spoken these things,

while they beheld,

he was  
taken up; and a cloud re-  
ceived him out of their sight.

<sup>10</sup> And while they looked  
stedfastly towards heaven as  
he went up, behold, two men  
stood by them in white appa-  
rel; <sup>11</sup> which also said, Ye

*Mark* xvi. 19, 20.*Luke* xxiv. 50—53.

<sup>52</sup>And they worshipped him,  
and returned to  
Jerusalem

with great joy :

<sup>53</sup>And were continually in  
the temple, praising and blessing  
God. Amen.

<sup>20</sup>And they went forth, and  
preached every where, the  
Lord working with *them*, and  
confirming the word with  
signs following. Amen.

## SECTION XVIII

### CONCLUSION OF ST. JOHN'S GOSPEL

*John* xx. 30, 31.

<sup>30</sup>And many other signs  
truly did Jesus in the presence  
of his disciples, which are not  
written in this book: <sup>31</sup>but  
these are written, that ye might  
believe that Jesus is the Christ,  
the Son of God; and that be-  
lieving, ye might have life  
through his name.

*John* xxi. 25.

<sup>25</sup>And there are also many  
other things which Jesus did,  
the which, if they should be  
written every one, I suppose  
that even the world itself could  
not contain the books that  
should be written. Amen.

---

*Acts* i. 9—12.

men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven.

<sup>12</sup> Then returned they unto Jerusalem from the mount called Olivet, which is from Jerusalem a sabbath day's journey.



# AN INDEX

BY WHICH EVERY CHAPTER AND VERSE SUCCESSIVELY IN THE FOUR GOSPELS MAY BE FOUND IN THE HARMONY, AND FROM THENCE IN THE COMMENTARY.

ST. MATTHEW.					
CHAP.	VER.	PAGE	CHAP.	VER.	PAGE
I.	1—17	9	IX.	9	72
	18—25	6		10—17	152
II.	1—12	11		18—26	156
	13—23	13		27—34	166
III.	1—6	18		35—38	168
	7—10	22	X.	1	168
	11, 12	24		2—4	88
	13—17	24		5—15	168
IV.	1—11	28		16—42	172
	12	38	XI.	1	174
	13—16	46		2—15	95
	17—22	47		16—30	98
	23—25	54	XII.	1—8	78
V.	1	54		9—14	80
	2—16	56		15—21	84
	17—48	56		22—37	102
VI.	1—34	59		38—42	108
VII.	1—29	61		43—45	110
VIII.	1	63		46—50	112
	2—4	64	XIII.	1—9	122
	5—13	92		10—23	128
	14—17	50		24—30	124
	18—22	138		31—35	126
	23—27	140		36	128
	28—34	144		36—43	136
IX.	1	150		44—52	137
	2—8	68		53	138
				54—58	166
			XIV.	1, 2. 6—12	176





CHAP.	VER.	PAGE
II.	15-22 .....	152
	23-28 .....	78
III.	1-6 .....	80
	7-12 .....	84
	13-19 .....	86
	19-30 .....	102
	31-35 .....	112
IV.	1-9, 26-29 .....	122
	10-25 .....	128
	30-34 .....	126
	35 .....	138
	36-41 .....	140
V.	1-20 .....	144
	21 .....	150
	22-43 .....	156
VI.	1-6 .....	166
	6-11 .....	168
	12, 13 .....	174
	14-16, 21-29 .....	176
	17-20 .....	40
	30-34 .....	180
	35-44 .....	184
	45, 46 .....	188
	47-52 .....	190
	53-56 .....	194
VII.	1 .....	200
	2-13 .....	200
	14-23 .....	203
	24-30 .....	205
	31 .....	207
	32-37 .....	207
VIII.	1-9 .....	208
	9-13 .....	209
	14-21 .....	211
	22-26 .....	212
	27-30 .....	214
	31-38 .....	216
IX.	1 .....	216
	2-13 .....	220
	14-29 .....	226
	30-32 .....	232
	33-37 .....	236
	38-50 .....	238
X.	1-12 .....	280
	13-16 .....	282
	17-31 .....	284
	32-34 .....	292
	35-45 .....	294
	46-52 .....	296
XI.	1-7 .....	310
	8-10 .....	314
	11 .....	318

CHAP.	VER.	PAGE
XI.	12-14 .....	321
	15-19 .....	322
	20-26 .....	324
	27-33 .....	326
XII.	1-9 .....	330
	10-12 .....	334
	13-17 .....	338
	18-27 .....	340
	28-34 .....	346
	34-37 .....	348
	38, 39 .....	350
	40 .....	352
	41-44 .....	357
XIII.	1-4 .....	358
	5-8 .....	360
	9-13 .....	362
	14-23 .....	366
	24-27 .....	370
	28-37 .....	372
XIV.	1, 2, 10, 11 .....	382
	3 .....	304
	4-9 .....	306
	12-16 .....	384
	17 .....	388
	21, 18-20 .....	390
	22 .....	398
	23-25 .....	402
	26-31 .....	408
	32-42 .....	412
	43-52 .....	416
	53-72 .....	424
	55-64 .....	430
	65 .....	432
XV.	1 .....	434
	2-5 .....	436
	6-14 .....	440
	16-19, 15, 20 .....	444
	21 .....	450
	22-36 .....	454
	37-41 .....	462
	42-47 .....	468
XVI.	1-4 .....	474
	5-8 .....	476
	9-11 .....	479
	12 .....	481
	13 .....	482
	14 .....	484
	15-18 .....	488
	19, 20 .....	490
	ST. LUKE.	
I.	1-4 .....	1

CHAP.	VER.	PAGE
I.	5-25 .....	1
	26-38 .....	3
	39-56 .....	4
	57-80 .....	5
II.	1-7 .....	7
	8-20 .....	7
	21 .....	8
	22-39 .....	12
	40-52 .....	14
III.	1-6 .....	19
	7-18 .....	22
	15-17 .....	25
	18 .....	23
	19, 20 .....	41
	21-23 .....	25
	23-38 .....	9
IV.	1-13 .....	29
	14 .....	41
	14-30 .....	45
	31 .....	46
	31-37 .....	48
	38-41 .....	51
	42-44 .....	53
V.	1-11 .....	63
	12-16 .....	65
	17-26 .....	67
	27, 28 .....	73
	29-39 .....	153
VI.	1-5 .....	79
	6-11 .....	81
	12-16 .....	87
	17-26 .....	90
	27-38 .....	90
	39-49 .....	91
VII.	1-10 .....	92
	11-17 .....	95
	18-28 .....	95
	29-35 .....	98
	36-50 .....	99
VIII.	1-3 .....	101
	4-8 .....	123
	9-18 .....	129
	19 .....	113
	20, 21 .....	113
	22 .....	139
	22-25 .....	141
	26-39 .....	145
	40 .....	151
	41-56 .....	157
IX.	1-5 .....	169
	6 .....	175
	7-9 .....	177

CHAP.	VER.	PAGE
IX.	10, 11 .....	181
	12-17 .....	185
	18-21 .....	215
	22-27 .....	217
	28-36 .....	221
	37-42 .....	227
	43-45 .....	233
	46-48 .....	237
	49, 50 .....	239
	51-56 .....	276
	57-62 .....	139
X.	1-16 .....	262
	17-24 .....	263
	25-37 .....	264
	38-42 .....	257
XI.	1-13 .....	265
	14, 15, 17-23 .....	103
	16, 29-36 .....	108
	24-26 .....	110
	27, 28 .....	113
	37-54 .....	114
XII.	1-12 .....	116
	13-21 .....	117
	22-40 .....	118
	41-59 .....	121
XIII.	1-9 .....	121
	10-17 .....	266
	18-21 .....	127
	22-35 .....	267
XIV.	1-6 .....	268
	7-14 .....	268
	15-24 .....	269
	25-35 .....	270
XV.	1-10 .....	271
	11-32 .....	272
XVI.	1-13 .....	273
	14-31 .....	274
XVII.	1-10 .....	276
	11-19 .....	277
	20-37 .....	278
XVIII.	1-8 .....	279
	9-14 .....	279
	15-17 .....	283
	18-30 .....	285
	31-34 .....	293
	35-43 .....	297
XIX.	1-10 .....	300
	11-28 .....	302
	29-35 .....	311
	36-40 .....	315
	41-44 .....	316
	45-48 .....	323

CHAP.	VER.	PAGE
XX.	1-8.....	327
	9-16.....	331
	17-19.....	335
	20-26.....	339
	27-40.....	341
	41-44.....	349
	45, 46.....	351
	47.....	353
XXI.	1-4.....	357
	5-7.....	359
	8-11.....	361
	12-19.....	363
	20-24.....	367
	25-27.....	371
	28-36.....	373
	37, 38.....	383
XXII.	1-6.....	383
	7-13.....	385
	14-18.....	389
	19.....	399
	20.....	403
	21-30.....	391
	31-38.....	398
	39.....	409
	40-46.....	413
	47-53.....	417
	54-62.....	425
	63-65.....	433
	66-71.....	435
XXIII.	1.....	435
	2-5.....	437
	6-12.....	438
	13-23.....	441
	23-25.....	449
	26-32.....	451
	33-45.....	455
	45-49.....	463
	50-56.....	469
XXIV.	1-11.....	480
	12.....	477
	13-32.....	481
	33-35.....	483
	36-43.....	483
	44-49.....	489
	50-53.....	490

ST. JOHN.

I.	1-18.....	16
	19-34.....	31
	35-51.....	32

CHAP.	VER.	PAGE
II.	1-12.....	33
	13-25.....	35
III.	1-21.....	36
	22-36.....	37
IV.	1-3.....	39
	4-42.....	42
	43-54.....	44
V.	1-9.....	74
	9-16.....	75
	17-29.....	75
	30-47.....	76
VI.	1-5.....	181
	5-14.....	185
	15.....	191
	16-21.....	191
	22-26.....	196
	27-40.....	197
	41-46.....	198
	47-59.....	198
	60-71.....	199
VII.	1.....	201
	2-10.....	245
	11-36.....	246
	37-53.....	247
VIII.	1.....	247
	2-11.....	248
	12-30.....	249
	31-59.....	250
IX.	1-41.....	252
X.	1-21.....	254
	22-42.....	256
XI.	1-16.....	257
	17-44.....	258
	45-54.....	260
	55-57.....	304
XII.	1-3.....	305
	4-8.....	307
	9-11.....	308
	12-16.....	311
	13, 17-19.....	315
	20-36.....	319
	37-50.....	320
XIII.	1.....	389
	2-17.....	390
	18-30.....	391
	31-38.....	396
XIV.	1-31.....	400
XV.	1-27.....	402
XVI.	1-4.....	402
	5-33.....	405
XVII.	1-26.....	407
XVIII.	1.....	409

CHAP.	VER.	PAGE
XVIII.	2—11 .....	417
	12—18. 25—27.....	425
	19—24 .....	430
	28—38 .....	436
	39, 40.....	441
XIX.	1—15 .....	445
	16 .....	449
	17 .....	451
	17—29 .....	455

CHAP.	VER.	PAGE
XIX.	30—37 .....	463
	38—42 .....	469
XX.	1—10 .....	477
	11—18 .....	478
	19—23 .....	483
	24—29 .....	484
	30, 31.....	492
XXI.	1—24 .....	486
	25 .....	492

THE END.







